

Frankenstein

or the Modern Prometheus

by Mary Wollstonecraft (Godwin) Shelley

In Empowerment Script
A New Reading Pleasure

Join the Reading Revolution

> enjoy > connect

empowermentscript.com

achieve < create <

Read your favourite classic in empowerment script

It can increase brain hemisphere connection, help with PTSD, help with some dyslexia,

Lowen Clarke discovered and created empowerment script in 2003. After years of research, the first book in empowerment script was published in 2015, a children's picturebook 'Sam the Tram's Dance Club' (available at Apple iTunes) The work was found to be capable of amazing results with trauma, and PTSD.

Some people have found reading in this new format a pleasure, others have found that connection and creativity is sparked, others met with and dealt with emotions, some find it is more efficient reading, some find it helps dyslexia, and others have found it has helped with deep PTSD, trauma and dissociation, when working with a therapist.
What will you find ?

We invite feedback for the research project : suggestions in end pages.

If you are using this as a strengthening exercise for PTSD, let your therapist know, so they can use skilled observation over a few months.

> READ > THIS > WAY
WAY < THIS < NOW < AND <

>THE > FIRST > LINE > reads > from > left > to > right.
.left < to < right < from < reads < line < second < The <

Empowerment script is patented and copyrighted.
Allowed use : we invite researchers to ask permission to try out a test usage.

Acknowledgements Texts mainly sourced from Gutenberg and used under their commons statements.

Feedback invited

CONTENTS

Letter 1

Letter 2

Letter 3

Letter 4

Chapter 1

Chapter 2

Chapter 3

Chapter 4

Chapter 5

Chapter 6

Chapter 7

Chapter 8

Chapter 9

Chapter 10

Chapter 11

Chapter 12

Chapter 13

Chapter 14

Chapter 15

Chapter 16

Chapter 17

Chapter 18

Chapter 19

Chapter 20

Chapter 21

Chapter 22

Chapter 23

Chapter 24

Frankenstein

Letter 1

TO Mrs. Saville, England

St. Petersburg, Dec. 11th, 17-

You will rejoice to hear that no disaster has accompanied the
such with regarded have you which enterprise an of commencement
evil forebodings. I arrived here yesterday, and my first task is
in confidence increasing and welfare my of sister dear my assure to
the success of my undertaking.

I am already far north of London, and as I walk in the streets of
,cheeks my upon play breeze northern cold a feel I ,Petersburgh
which braces my nerves and fills me with delight. Do you understand
regions the from travelled has which ,breeze This ?feeling this
towards which I am advancing, gives me a foretaste of those icy climes.
fervent more become daydreams my ,promise of wind this by Inspired
and vivid. I try in vain to be persuaded that the pole is the seat
the as imagination my to itself presents ever it ;desolation and frost of
region of beauty and delight. There, Margaret, the sun is forever visible,
.splendour perpetual a diffusing and horizon the skirting just disk broad its
There--for with your leave, my sister, I will put some trust in preceding
,sea calm a over sailing ,and ;banished are frost and snow --navigators
we may be wafted to a land surpassing in wonders and in beauty every region
features and productions Its .globe habitable the on discovered hitherto
may be without example, as the phenomena of the heavenly bodies undoubtedly
country a in expected be not may What .solitudes undiscovered those in are
of eternal light? I may there discover the wondrous power which attracts
require that observations celestial thousand a regulate may and needle the
only this voyage to render their seeming eccentricities consistent forever.
world the of part a of sight the with curiosity ardent my satiate shall I
never before visited, and may tread a land never before imprinted by the
conquer to sufficient are they and ,enticements my are These .man of foot
all fear of danger or death and to induce me to commence this laborious voyage
holiday his with ,boat little a in embarks he when feels child a joy the with
mates, on an expedition of discovery up his native river. But supposing all
benefit inestimable the contest cannot you ,false be to conjectures these

Frankenstein

which I shall confer on all mankind, to the last generation, by discovering many so present at which reach to ,countries those to pole the near passage a months are requisite; or by ascertaining the secret of the magnet, which, .mine as such undertaking an by effected be only can ,possible all at if

These reflections have dispelled the agitation with which I began my letter, ,heaven to me elevates which enthusiasm an with glow heart my feel I and for nothing contributes so much to tranquillize the mind as a steady purpose expedition This .eye intellectual its fix may soul the which on point a-- has been the favourite dream of my early years. I have read with ardour prospect the in made been have which voyages various the of accounts the of arriving at the North Pacific Ocean through the seas which surround for made voyages the all of history a that remember may You .pole the purposes of discovery composed the whole of our good Uncle Thomas' library. .reading of fond passionately was I yet ,neglected was education My These volumes were my study day and night, and my familiarity with them my that learning on ,child a as ,felt had I which regret that increased father's dying injunction had forbidden my uncle to allow me to embark .life seafaring a in

These visions faded when I perused, for the first time, those poets also I .heaven to it lifted and soul my entranced effusions whose became a poet and for one year lived in a paradise of my own creation; the where temple the in niche a obtain might also I that imagined I names of Homer and Shakespeare are consecrated. You are well acquainted at just But .disappointment the bore I heavily how and failure my with that time I inherited the fortune of my cousin, and my thoughts were .bent earlier their of channel the into turned

Six years have passed since I resolved on my present undertaking. to myself dedicated I which from hour the remember ,now even ,can I this great enterprise. I commenced by inuring my body to hardship. ;Sea North the to expeditions several on -whale the accompanied I I voluntarily endured cold, famine, thirst, and want of sleep; devoted and day the during sailors common the than harder worked often I my nights to the study of mathematics, the theory of medicine, naval a which from science physical of branches those and adventurer might derive the greatest practical advantage. ,whaler Greenland a in -under an as myself hired actually I Twice

Frankenstein

and acquitted myself to admiration. I must own I felt a little proud and vessel the in dignity second the me offered captain my when entreated me to remain with the greatest earnestness, so valuable deserve not I do ,Margaret dear ,now And .services my consider he did to accomplish some great purpose? My life might have been passed in ease placed wealth that enticement every to glory preferred I but ,luxury and in my path. Oh, that some encouraging voice would answer in the affirmative! spirits my and ,fluctuate hopes my but ;firm is resolution my and courage My are often depressed. I am about to proceed on a long and difficult voyage, required am I :fortitude my all demand will which of emergencies the not only to raise the spirits of others, but sometimes to sustain my own, .failing are theirs when

This is the most favourable period for travelling in Russia. They fly ,and ,pleasant is motion the ;sledges their in snow the over quickly in my opinion, far more agreeable than that of an English stagecoach. which dress --furs in wrapped are you if ,excessive not is cold The I have already adopted, for there is a great difference between walking exercise no when ,hours for motionless seated remaining and deck the prevents the blood from actually freezing in your veins. I have no Petersburg .St between -post the on life my lose to ambition and Archangel. I shall depart for the latter town in a fortnight can which ,there ship a hire to is intention my and ;weeks three or easily be done by paying the insurance for the owner, and to engage accustomed are who those among necessary think I as sailors many as to the whale-fishing. I do not intend to sail until the month of June; ?question this answer I can how ,sister dear ,Ah ?return I shall when and If I succeed, many, many months, perhaps years, will pass before you .never or ,soon again me see will you ,fail I If .meet may I and Farewell, my dear, excellent Margaret. Heaven shower down blessings gratitude my testify again and again may I that ,me save and ,you on for all your love and kindness.

Your affectionate brother,
Walton .R

Frankenstein

Letter 2

To Mrs. Saville, England

Archangel, 28th March, 17-

How slowly the time passes here, encompassed as I am by frost and snow! My vessel a hired have I .enterprise my towards taken is step second a Yet and am occupied in collecting my sailors; those whom I have already possessed certainly are and depend can I whom on men be to appear engaged of dauntless courage.

But I have one want which I have never yet been able to satisfy, most a as feel now I which of object the of absence the and severe evil, I have no friend, Margaret: when I am glowing with the ;joy my participate to none be will there ,success of enthusiasm if I am assailed by disappointment, no one will endeavour to sustain me ;true is it ,paper to thoughts my commit shall I .dejection in but that is a poor medium for the communication of feeling. ,me with sympathize could who man a of company the desire I whose eyes would reply to mine. You may deem me romantic, .friend a of want the feel bitterly I but ,sister dear my I have no one near me, gentle yet courageous, possessed of are tastes whose ,mind capacious a of as well as cultivated a like my own, to approve or amend my plans. How would such a ardent too am I !brother poor your of faults the repair friend in execution and too impatient of difficulties. But it is a still fourteen first the for -self am I that me to evil greater years of my life I ran wild on a common and read nothing but our with acquainted became I age that At .voyages of books "Thomas Uncle the celebrated poets of our own country; but it was only when it benefits important most its derive to power my in be to ceased had from such a conviction that I perceived the necessity of becoming .country native my of that than languages more with acquainted Now I am twenty-eight and am in reality more illiterate than more thought have I that true is It .fifteen of schoolboys many and that my daydreams are more extended and magnificent, but they friend a need greatly I and ;KEEPING)it call painters the as(want

Frankenstein

who would have sense enough not to despise me as romantic,
.mind my regulate to endeavour to me for enough affection and
Well, these are useless complaints; I shall certainly find
.Archangel in here even nor ,ocean wide the on friend no
among merchants and seamen. Yet some feelings, unallied to
.bosoms rugged these in even beat ,nature human of dross the
My lieutenant, for instance, is a man of wonderful courage
word to ,rather or ,glory of desirous madly is he ;enterprise and
my phrase more characteristically, of advancement in his profession.
professional and national of midst the in and ,Englishman an is He
prejudices, unsoftened by cultivation, retains some of the noblest
board on him with acquainted became first I .humanity of endowments
a whale vessel; finding that he was unemployed in this city,
master The .enterprise my in assist to him engaged easily I
is a person of an excellent disposition and is remarkable in
.discipline his of mildness the and gentleness his for ship the
This circumstance, added to his well-known integrity and
.him engage to desirous very me made ,courage dauntless
A youth passed in solitude, my best years spent under your
groundwork the refined so has ,fosterage feminine and gentle
of my character that I cannot overcome an intense distaste
never have I :ship board on exercised brutality usual the to
believed it to be necessary, and when I heard of a mariner
respect the and heart of kindliness his for noted equally
and obedience paid to him by his crew, I felt myself peculiarly
him of heard I .services his secure to able being in fortunate
first in rather a romantic manner, from a lady who owes to him
.story his is ,briefly ,This .life her of happiness the
Some years ago he loved a young Russian lady of moderate fortune,
father the -prize in sum considerable a amassed having and
of the girl consented to the match. He saw his mistress
,tears in bathed was she but ;ceremony destined the before once
and throwing herself at his feet, entreated him to spare her,
he that but ,another loved she that time same the at confessing
was poor, and that her father would never consent to the union.
informed being on and ,suppliant the reassured friend generous My
of the name of her lover, instantly abandoned his pursuit.
designed had he which on ,money his with farm a bought already had He
to pass the remainder of his life; but he bestowed the whole on his rival,

,stock purchase to -prize his of remains the with together
and then himself solicited the young woman's father to consent
,refused decidedly man old the But .lover her with marriage her to
thinking himself bound in honour to my friend, who, when he found
heard he until returned nor ,country his quitted ,inexorable father the
that his former mistress was married according to her inclinations.
is he then but ;so is He .exclaim will you "!fellow noble a What"
wholly uneducated: he is as silent as a Turk, and a kind of ignorant
the conduct his renders it while ,which ,him attends carelessness
more astonishing, detracts from the interest and sympathy which
.command would he otherwise

Yet do not suppose, because I complain a little or because I
,know never may I which toils my for consolation a conceive can
that I am wavering in my resolutions. Those are as fixed as fate,
permit shall weather the until delayed now only is voyage my and
my embarkation. The winter has been dreadfully severe, but the spring
that so ,season early remarkably a as considered is it and ,well promises
perhaps I may sail sooner than I expected. I shall do nothing rashly:
considerateness and prudence my in confide to sufficiently me know you
whenever the safety of others is committed to my care.

I cannot describe to you my sensations on the near prospect
you to communicate to impossible is It .undertaking my of
a conception of the trembling sensation, half pleasurable
.depart to preparing am I which with ,fearful half and
I am going to unexplored regions, to "the land of mist and snow,"
alarmed be not do therefore ;albatross no kill shall I but
for my safety or if I should come back to you as worn and woeful
,allusion my at smile will You ".Mariner Ancient" the as
but I will disclose a secret. I have often attributed my
dangerous the ,for enthusiasm passionate my ,to attachment
mysteries of ocean to that production of the most imaginative
soul my in work at something is There .poets modern of
which I do not understand. I am practically industrious--
--labour and perseverance with execute to workman a ,painstaking
but besides this there is a love for the marvellous, a belief in
me hurries which ,projects my all in intertwined ,marvellous the
out of the common pathways of men, even to the wild sea and unvisited

Frankenstein

.considerations dearer to return to But .explore to about am I regions
Shall I meet you again, after having traversed immense seas, and returned
such expect not dare I ?America or Africa of cape southern most the by
success, yet I cannot bear to look on the reverse of the picture.
may I :opportunity every by me to write to present the for Continue
receive your letters on some occasions when I need them most to support
,affection with me Remember .tenderly very you love I .spirits my
should you never hear from me again.

Your affectionate brother,
Walton Robert

Frankenstein

Letter 3

To Mrs. Saville, England

July 7th, 17-

My dear Sister,

I write a few lines in haste to say that I am safe--and well advanced now merchantman a by England reach will letter This .voyage my on on its homeward voyage from Archangel; more fortunate than I, ,am I .years many for ,perhaps ,land native my see not may who however, in good spirits: my men are bold and apparently firm continually that ice of sheets floating the do nor ,purpose of pass us, indicating the dangers of the region towards which we reached already have We .them dismay to appear ,advancing are a very high latitude; but it is the height of summer, and although us blow which ,gales southern the ,England in as warm so not speedily towards those shores which I so ardently desire to attain, .expected not had I which warmth renovating of degree a breathe

No incidents have hitherto befallen us that would make a figure are leak a of springing the and gales stiff two or One .letter a in accidents which experienced navigators scarcely remember to record, during us to happen worse nothing if content well be shall I and our voyage.

Adieu, my dear Margaret. Be assured that for my own sake, as well ,cool be will I .danger encounter rashly not will I ,yours as persevering, and prudent.

But success SHALL crown my endeavours. Wherefore not? Thus far I very the ,seas pathless the over way secure a tracing ,gone have stars themselves being witnesses and testimonies of my triumph. What ?element obedient yet untamed the over proceed still not Why can stop the determined heart and resolved will of man?

Frankenstein

My swelling heart involuntarily pours itself out thus. But must
!sister beloved my bless Heaven .finish

R.W.

Frankenstein

Letter 4

To Mrs. Saville, England

August 5th, 17-

So strange an accident has happened to us that I cannot forbear me see will you that probable very is it although ,it recording before these papers can come into your possession.

Last Monday (July 31st) we were nearly surrounded by ice, which closed which in -sea the her leaving scarcely ,sides all on ship the in she floated. Our situation was somewhat dangerous, especially as we ,to lay accordingly We .fog thick very a by round compassed were hoping that some change would take place in the atmosphere and weather.

About two o'clock the mist cleared away, and we beheld, stretched which ,ice of plains irregular and vast ,direction every in out seemed to have no end. Some of my comrades groaned, and my a when ,thoughts anxious with watchful grow to began mind own strange sight suddenly attracted our attention and diverted our ,carriage low a perceived We .situation own our from solicitude fixed on a sledge and drawn by dogs, pass on towards the north, at ,man a of shape the had which being a ;mile a half of distance the but apparently of gigantic stature, sat in the sledge and guided our with traveller the of progress rapid the watched We .dogs the telescopes until he was lost among the distant inequalities of the ice. ,believed we as ,were We .wonder unqualified our excited appearance This many hundred miles from any land; but this apparition seemed to denote ,in Shut .supposed had we as distant so ,reality in ,not was it that however, by ice, it was impossible to follow his track, which we had this after hours two About .attention greatest the with observed occurrence we heard the ground sea, and before night the ice broke ,morning the until to lay ,however ,We .ship our freed and fearing to encounter in the dark those large loose masses which this of profited I .ice the of up breaking the after about float time to rest for a few hours.

Frankenstein

In the morning, however, as soon as it was light, I went upon deck apparently, vessel the of side one on busy sailors the all found and talking to someone in the sea. It was, in fact, a sledge, like that a on night the in us towards drifted had which, before seen had we large fragment of ice. Only one dog remained alive; but there was a .vessel the enter to persuading were sailors the whom it within being human He was not, as the other traveller seemed to be, a savage inhabitant deck on appeared I When .European a but, island undiscovered some of the master said, "Here is our captain, and he will not allow you to ".sea open the on perish

On perceiving me, the stranger addressed me in English, although with, he said ",vessel your board on come I Before" .accent foreign a "will you have the kindness to inform me whither you are bound?"

You may conceive my astonishment on hearing such a question whom to and destruction of brink the on man a from me to addressed I should have supposed that my vessel would have been a resource the wealth precious most the for exchanged have not would he which earth can afford. I replied, however, that we were on a voyage of .pole northern the towards discovery

Upon hearing this he appeared satisfied and consented to come on board. for capitulated thus who man the seen had you if, Margaret !God Good his safety, your surprise would have been boundless. His limbs were .suffering and fatigue by emaciated dreadfully body his and, frozen nearly I never saw a man in so wretched a condition. We attempted to carry him .fainted he air fresh the quitted had he as soon as but, cabin the into We accordingly brought him back to the deck and restored him to animation .quantity small a swallow to him forcing and brandy with him rubbing by As soon as he showed signs of life we wrapped him up in blankets and degrees slow By .stove kitchen the of chimney the near him placed he recovered and ate a little soup, which restored him wonderfully.

Two days passed in this manner before he was able to speak, and I .understanding of him deprived had sufferings his that feared often When he had in some measure recovered, I removed him to my own cabin more a saw never I .permit would duty my as much as him on attended and interesting creature: his eyes have generally an expression of wildness,

Frankenstein

act an performs anyone if ,when moments are there but ,madness even and of kindness towards him or does him the most trifling service, of beam a with ,were it as ,up lighted is countenance whole his benevolence and sweetness that I never saw equalled. But he is ,teeth his gnashes he sometimes and ,despairing and melancholy generally as if impatient of the weight of woes that oppresses him.

When my guest was a little recovered I had great trouble to keep off the men, be to him allow not would I but ;questions thousand a him ask to wished who tormented by their idle curiosity, in a state of body and mind whose ,however ,Once .repose entire upon depended evidently restoration the lieutenant asked why he had come so far upon the ice in so .vehicle a strange

His countenance instantly assumed an aspect of the deepest gloom, ".me from fled who one seek To" ,replied he and

"And did the man whom you pursued travel in the same fashion?"

"Yes."

"Then I fancy we have seen him, for the day before we picked you up ".ice the across ,it in man a with ,sledge a drawing dogs some saw we

This aroused the stranger's attention, and he asked a multitude of ,him called he as ,demon the which route the concerning questions had pursued. Soon after, when he was alone with me, he said, of that as well as ,curiosity your excited ,doubtless ,have I" these good people; but you are too considerate to make inquiries."

"Certainly; it would indeed be very impertinent and inhuman in me ".mine of inquisitiveness any with you trouble to

"And yet you rescued me from a strange and perilous situation; ".life to me restored benevolently have you

Soon after this he inquired if I thought that the breaking up of not could I that replied I .sledge other the destroyed had ice the answer with any degree of certainty, for the ice had not broken

Frankenstein

a at arrived have might traveller the and ,midnight near until place of safety before that time; but of this I could not judge. of frame decaying the animated life of spirit new a time this From the stranger. He manifested the greatest eagerness to be upon deck have I but ;appeared before had which sledge the for watch to persuaded him to remain in the cabin, for he is far too weak to that promised have I .atmosphere the of rawness the sustain someone should watch for him and give him instant notice if .sight in appear should object new any

Such is my journal of what relates to this strange occurrence up to but health in improved gradually has stranger The .day present the is very silent and appears uneasy when anyone except myself enters the that gentle and conciliating so are manners his Yet .cabin his sailors are all interested in him, although they have had very love to begin I ,part own my For .him with communication little him as a brother, and his constant and deep grief fills me with his in creature noble a been have must He .compassion and sympathy better days, being even now in wreck so attractive and amiable. find should I that ,Margaret dear my ,letters my of one in said I no friend on the wide ocean; yet I have found a man who, before his have to happy been have should I ,misery by broken been had spirit possessed as the brother of my heart.

I shall continue my journal concerning the stranger at intervals, .record to incidents fresh any have I should

August 13th, 17-

My affection for my guest increases every day. He excites at once see I can How .degree astonishing an to pity my and admiration my so noble a creature destroyed by misery without feeling the most ,cultivated so is mind his ;wise so yet ,gentle so is He ?grief poignant and when he speaks, although his words are culled with the choicest art, much now is He .eloquence unparalleled and rapidity with How they yet recovered from his illness and is continually on the deck, apparently ,unhappy although ,Yet .own his preceded that sledge the for watching he is not so utterly occupied by his own misery but that he interests

conversed frequently has He .others of projects the in deeply himself
with me on mine, which I have communicated to him without disguise.
eventual my of favour in arguments my all into attentively entered He
success and into every minute detail of the measures I had taken to
to evinced he which sympathy the by led easily was I .it secure
use the language of my heart, to give utterance to the burning
,me warmed that fervour the all with ,say to and soul my of ardour
how gladly I would sacrifice my fortune, my existence, my every
death or life 'man One .enterprise my of furtherance the to ,hope
were but a small price to pay for the acquirement of the knowledge
over transmit and acquire should I dominion the for ,sought I which
the elemental foes of our race. As I spoke, a dark gloom spread
tried he that perceived I first At .countenance 'listener my over
to suppress his emotion; he placed his hands before his eyes, and
from fast trickle tears beheld I as me failed and quivered voice my
between his fingers; a groan burst from his heaving breast. I paused;
share you Do !man Unhappy" :accents broken in ,spoke he length at
my madness? Have you drunk also of the intoxicating draught?
cup the dash will you and ,tale my reveal me let ;me Hear
from your lips!"

Such words, you may imagine, strongly excited my curiosity;
overcame stranger the seized had that grief of paroxysm the but
his weakened powers, and many hours of repose and tranquil
.composure his restore to necessary were conversation
Having conquered the violence of his feelings, he appeared to
the quelling and ;passion of slave the being for himself despise
dark tyranny of despair, he led me again to converse concerning
.years earlier my of history the me asked He .personally myself
The tale was quickly told, but it awakened various trains of reflection.
for thirst my of ,friend a finding of desire my of spoke I
a more intimate sympathy with a fellow mind than had ever
could man a that conviction my expressed and ,lot my to fallen
boast of little happiness who did not enjoy this blessing.
unfashioned are we" ;stranger the replied ",you with agree I"
creatures, but half made up, if one wiser, better, dearer than
to aid his lend not --be to ought friend a --ourselves
perfectionate our weak and faulty natures. I once had a friend,
,therefore ,entitled am and ,creatures human of noble most the

Frankenstein

to judge respecting friendship. You have hope, and the world
lost have --I But .despair for cause no have and ,you before
everything and cannot begin life anew."

As he said this his countenance became expressive of a calm,
silent was he But .heart the to me touched that grief settled
and presently retired to his cabin.

Even broken in spirit as he is, no one can feel more deeply than
every and ,sea the ,sky starry The .nature of beauties the does he
sight afforded by these wonderful regions seem still to have the
double a has man a Such .earth from soul his elevating of power
existence: he may suffer misery and be overwhelmed by disappointments,
spirit celestial a like be will he ,himself into retired has he when yet
that has a halo around him, within whose circle no grief or folly ventures.

Will you smile at the enthusiasm I express concerning this divine
and tutored been have You .him saw you if not would You ?wanderer
refined by books and retirement from the world, and you are
more the you renders only this but ;fastidious somewhat therefore
fit to appreciate the extraordinary merits of this wonderful man.
which is it quality what discover to endeavoured have I Sometimes
he possesses that elevates him so immeasurably above any other
,discernment intuitive an be to it believe I .knew ever I person
a quick but never-failing power of judgment, a penetration into the
to add ;precision and clearness for unequalled ,things of causes
this a facility of expression and a voice whose varied intonations
.music -soul are

August 19, 17-

Yesterday the stranger said to me, "You may easily perceive, Captain
.misfortunes unparalleled and great suffered have I that ,Walton
I had determined at one time that the memory of these evils
.determination my alter to me won have you but ,me with die should
You seek for knowledge and wisdom, as I once did; and I ardently
serpent a be not may wishes your of gratification the that hope
to sting you, as mine has been. I do not know that the relation

that reflect I when ,yet ;you to useful be will disasters my of
you are pursuing the same course, exposing yourself to the same
may you that imagine I ,am I what me rendered have which dangers
deduce an apt moral from my tale, one that may direct you
of case in you console and undertaking your in succeed you if
failure. Prepare to hear of occurrences which are usually deemed
fear might I nature of scenes tamer the among we Were .marvellous
to encounter your unbelief, perhaps your ridicule; but many things
which regions mysterious and wild these in possible appear will
would provoke the laughter of those unacquainted with the ever-
conveys tale my that but doubt I can nor ;nature of powers varied
in its series internal evidence of the truth of the events of which
".composed is it

You may easily imagine that I was much gratified by the offered
grief his renew should he that endure not could I yet ,communication
by a recital of his misfortunes. I felt the greatest eagerness
partly and curiosity from partly ,narrative promised the hear to
from a strong desire to ameliorate his fate if it were in my power.
.answer my in feelings these expressed I

"I thank you," he replied, "for your sympathy, but it is useless;
I then and ,event one for but wait I .fulfilled nearly is fate my
shall repose in peace. I understand your feeling," continued he,
,mistaken are you but" ;him interrupt to wished I that perceiving
my friend, if thus you will allow me to name you; nothing can alter
how perceive will you and ,history my to listen ;destiny my
irrevocably it is determined."

He then told me that he would commence his narrative the next day when
.thanks warmest the me from drew promise This .leisure at be should I
I have resolved every night, when I am not imperatively occupied
,words own his in possible as nearly as ,record to ,duties my by
what he has related during the day. If I should be engaged,
afford doubtless will manuscript This .notes make least at will I
you the greatest pleasure; but to me, who know him, and who hear it
read I shall sympathy and interest what --lips own his from
it in some future day! Even now, as I commence my task, his full-
with me on dwell eyes lustrous his ;ears my in swells voice toned

Frankenstein

all their melancholy sweetness; I see his thin hand raised in animation,
.within soul the by irradiated are face his of lineaments the while

Strange and harrowing must be his story, frightful the storm which
--it wrecked and course its on vessel gallant the embraced

Chapter 1

I am by birth a Genevese, and my family is one of the most distinguished counsellors years many for been had ancestors My .republic that of and syndics, and my father had filled several public situations him knew who all by respected was He .reputation and honour with for his integrity and indefatigable attention to public business. of affairs the by occupied perpetually days younger his passed He his country; a variety of circumstances had prevented his marrying husband a became he that life of decline the until it was nor ,early and the father of a family.

As the circumstances of his marriage illustrate his character, I intimate most his of One .them relating from refrain cannot friends was a merchant who, from a flourishing state, fell, name whose ,man This .poverty into ,mischances numerous through was Beaufort, was of a proud and unbending disposition and could not he where country same the in oblivion and poverty in live to bear had formerly been distinguished for his rank and magnificence. ,manner honourable most the in ,therefore ,debts his paid Having he retreated with his daughter to the town of Lucerne, where he lived the with Beaufort loved father My .wretchedness in and unknown truest friendship and was deeply grieved by his retreat in these pride false the deplored bitterly He .circumstances unfortunate which led his friend to a conduct so little worthy of the affection ,out him seek to endeavouring in time no lost He .them united that with the hope of persuading him to begin the world again through to measures effectual taken had Beaufort .assistance and credit his conceal himself, and it was ten months before my father discovered ,house the to hastened he ,discovery this at Overjoyed .abode his which was situated in a mean street near the Reuss. But when he entered, a but saved had Beaufort .him welcomed alone despair and misery very small sum of money from the wreck of his fortunes, but it ,months some for sustenance with him provide to sufficient was and in the meantime he hoped to procure some respectable employment in spent ,consequently ,was interval The .house 'merchant a in

Frankenstein

inaction; his grief only became more deep and rankling when he had his of hold fast so took it length at and ,reflection for leisure mind that at the end of three months he lay on a bed of sickness, .exertion any of incapable

His daughter attended him with the greatest tenderness, but she saw that and decreasing rapidly was fund little their that despair with there was no other prospect of support. But Caroline Beaufort to rose courage her and ,mould uncommon an of mind a possessed support her in her adversity. She procured plain work; she plaited scarcely pittance a earn to contrived means various by and straw sufficient to support life.

Several months passed in this manner. Her father grew worse; of means her ;him attending in occupied entirely more was time her subsistence decreased; and in the tenth month her father died in blow last This .beggar a and orphan an her leaving ,arms her overcame her, and she knelt by Beaufort's coffin weeping bitterly, spirit protecting a like came He .chamber the entered father my when to the poor girl, who committed herself to his care; and after the her placed and Geneva to her conducted he friend his of interment under the protection of a relation. Two years after this event .wife his became Caroline

There was a considerable difference between the ages of my parents, in closer only them unite to seemed circumstance this but bonds of devoted affection. There was a sense of justice that necessary it rendered which mind upright 'father my in he should approve highly to love strongly. Perhaps during former one of unworthiness -late the from suffered had he years beloved and so was disposed to set a greater value on tried worth. ,mother my to attachment his in worship and gratitude of show a was There differing wholly from the doting fondness of age, for it was inspired ,of means the be to desire a and virtues her for reverence by in some degree, recompensing her for the sorrows she had endured, .her to behaviour his to grace inexpressible gave which but Everything was made to yield to her wishes and her convenience. ,gardener the by sheltered is exotic fair a as ,her shelter to strove He from every rougher wind and to surround her with all that could tend to

Frankenstein

Her health, her mind benevolent and soft, her in emotion pleasurable excitement, and even the tranquillity of her hitherto constant spirit, had been shaken. Elapsed had that years two the. During, through gone had she what by previous to their marriage my father had gradually relinquished all sought they union their after immediately and; functions public his the pleasant climate of Italy, and the change of scene and interest restorative as, wonders of land that through tour a on attendant for her weakened frame.

From Italy they visited Germany and France. I, their eldest child, rambles their in them accompanied infant an as and, Naples at born was I remained for several years their only child. Much as they were attached from affection of stores inexhaustible draw to seemed they, other each to a very mine of love to bestow them upon me. My mother's tender caresses my are me regarding while pleasure benevolent of smile 'father my and first recollections. I was their plaything and their idol, and something them on bestowed creature helpless and innocent the, child --better by heaven, whom to bring up to good, and whose future lot it was in they as according, misery or happiness to direct to hands their fulfilled their duties towards me. With this deep consciousness of, life given had they which to being the towards owed they what added to the active spirit of tenderness that animated both, it may I life infant my of hour every during while that imagined be received a lesson of patience, of charity, and of self-control, of train one but seemed all that cord silken a by guided so was I enjoyment to me. For a long time I was their only care. My mother single their continued I but, daughter a have to desired much had offspring. When I was about five years old, while making an the on week a passed they, Italy of frontiers the beyond excursion shores of the Lake of Como. Their benevolent disposition often was, mother my to, This, poor the of cottages the enter them made more than a duty; it was a necessity, a passion--remembering what in act to her --relieved been had she how and, suffered had she her turn the guardian angel to the afflicted. During one of their notice their attracted vale a of foldings the in cot poor a walks as being singularly disconsolate, while the number of half-clothed, shape worst its in penury of spoke it about gathered children. One day, when my father had gone by himself to Milan, my mother, his and peasant a found She, abode this visited, me by accompanied

Frankenstein

wife, hard working, bent down by care and labour, distributing a which one was there these Among .babes hungry five to meal scanty attracted my mother far above all the rest. She appeared of a little hardy -dark were others four The .stock different vagrants; this child was thin and very fair. Her hair was the ,clothing her of poverty the despite and ,gold living brightest seemed to set a crown of distinction on her head. Her brow was the and lips her and ,cloudless eyes blue her ,ample and clear moulding of her face so expressive of sensibility and sweetness distinct a of as her on looking without her behold could none that species, a being heaven-sent, and bearing a celestial stamp in all fixed mother my that perceiving ,woman peasant The .features her eyes of wonder and admiration on this lovely girl, eagerly daughter the but ,child her not was She .history her communicated of a Milanese nobleman. Her mother was a German and had died on good these with placed been had infant The .birth her giving people to nurse: they were better off then. They had not been father The .born just but was child eldest their and ,married long of their charge was one of those Italians nursed in the memory of the ,frementi ognor schiavi the among --Italy of glory antique who exerted himself to obtain the liberty of his country. He became lingered still or died had he Whether .weakness its of victim the in the dungeons of Austria was not known. His property was confiscated; foster her with continued She .beggar a and orphan an became child his parents and bloomed in their rude abode, fairer than a garden rose among found he ,Milan from returned father my When .brambles -dark playing with me in the hall of our villa a child fairer than pictured cherub and form whose and looks her from radiance shed to seemed who creature a-- motions were lighter than the chamois of the hills. The apparition her on prevailed mother my permission his With .explained soon was rustic guardians to yield their charge to her. They were fond of but ,them to blessing a seemed had presence Her .orphan sweet the it would be unfair to her to keep her in poverty and want when Providence ,priest village their consulted They .protection powerful such her afforded and the result was that Elizabeth Lavenza became the inmate of my parents' all of companion adored and beautiful --sister than more --house my occupations and my pleasures.

Frankenstein

Everyone loved Elizabeth. The passionate and almost reverential
it shared I while ,became her regarded all which with attachment
my pride and my delight. On the evening previous to her being
pretty a have I" ,playfully said had mother my ,home my to brought
present for my Victor--tomorrow he shall have it." And when,
,gift promised her as me to Elizabeth presented she ,morrow the on
I, with childish seriousness, interpreted her words literally and
.cherish and ,love ,protect to --mine as Elizabeth upon looked
All praises bestowed on her I received as made to a possession of
.cousin of name the by familiarly other each called We .own my
No word, no expression could body forth the kind of relation
death till since ,sister than more --me to stood she which in
she was to be mine only.

Chapter 2

We were brought up together; there was not quite a year difference in our ages, and we were to strangers as we were to each other. Harmony was the soul of our companionship, and drew characters of our own in subsisting that contrast and diversity which drew us nearer together. Elizabeth was of a calmer and more concentrated disposition, more intense, more capable, and more deeply smitten with the thirst for knowledge. She was busied with herself in the following of the aerial creations of poets, and in the majestic and wondrous scenes which surrounded our Swiss home--the sublime shapes of the mountains, the changes of seasons, the tempest and calm, the silence of winter, and the life and turbulence of summer. Her delight and admiration for the Alpine scene was ample scope for her investigations. While my companion contemplated with a serious and satisfied spirit the magnificent appearances of things, I delighted in their causes. The world was to me a secret which I desired to divine. My curiosity to research the hidden laws of nature, to learn the nature of things, as they were unfolded to me, was akin to gladness. My earliest sensations I can remember the

On the birth of a second son, my junior by seven years, my parents fixed their residence entirely in their native country. We possessed a house in the eastern shore of the lake, and a campagne at Belrive, at the distance of rather more than a league from the city. We principally resided in the latter, and my parents and I were passed in considerable seclusion. It was my temper to avoid a crowd, and I was indifferent to the attachment of myself to my school-fellows in general; but I united myself to them in the closest friendship. Henry Clerval was the son of a merchant of Geneva. He was a boy of singular fancy and talent, and loved hardship, and even danger for its own sake. He was deeply read in the romance and chivalry of books, and began to write many a tale of enchantment and knightly adventure, which he acted out in masquerades, and he made us enter into the characters which he drew from the heroes of Roncesvalles, of the

their shed who train chivalrous the and ,Arthur King of Table Round
blood to redeem the holy sepulchre from the hands of the infidels.

No human being could have passed a happier childhood than myself.
.indulgence and kindness of spirit very the by possessed were parents My
We felt that they were not the tyrants to rule our lot according to
delights many the all of creators and agents the but ,caprice their
which we enjoyed. When I mingled with other families I distinctly
assisted gratitude and ,was lot my fortunate peculiarly how discerned
the development of filial love.

My temper was sometimes violent, and my passions vehement; but by
childish towards not turned were they temperature my in law some
pursuits but to an eager desire to learn, and not to learn all
of structure the neither that confess I .indiscriminately things
languages, nor the code of governments, nor the politics of various
heaven of secrets the was It .me for attractions possessed states
and earth that I desired to learn; and whether it was the outward
mysterious the and nature of spirit inner the or things of substance
soul of man that occupied me, still my inquiries were directed
secrets physical the ,sense highest it in or ,metaphysical the to
of the world.

Meanwhile Clerval occupied himself, so to speak, with the moral
,heroes of virtues the ,life of stage busy The .things of relations
and the actions of men were his theme; and his hope and his dream was
the as story in recorded are names whose those among one become to
gallant and adventurous benefactors of our species. The saintly soul
.home peaceful our in lamp -shrine a like shone Elizabeth of
Her sympathy was ours; her smile, her soft voice, the sweet glance
.us animate and bless to there ever were ,eyes celestial her of
She was the living spirit of love to soften and attract; I might
,nature my of ardour the through ,study my in sullen become have
but that she was there to subdue me to a semblance of her own gentleness.
?Clerval of spirit noble the on entrench ill aught --Clerval And
Yet he might not have been so perfectly humane, so thoughtful in
his amidst tenderness and kindness of full so ,generosity his
passion for adventurous exploit, had she not unfolded to him the
aim and end the good doing the made and beneficence of loveliness real

of his soaring ambition.

I feel exquisite pleasure in dwelling on the recollections of childhood, of visions bright its changed and mind my tainted had misfortune before extensive usefulness into gloomy and narrow reflections upon self. record also I ,days early my of picture the drawing in ,Besides those events which led, by insensible steps, to my after tale of misery, which passion that of birth the for myself to account would I when for afterwards ruled my destiny I find it arise, like a mountain river, ,proceeded it as swelling ,but ;sources forgotten almost and ignoble from it became the torrent which, in its course, has swept away all my hopes ;fate my regulated has that genius the is philosophy Natural .joys and I desire, therefore, in this narration, to state those facts which years thirteen was I When .science that for predilection my to led of age we all went on a party of pleasure to the baths near Thonon; confined day a remain to us obliged weather the of inclemency the to the inn. In this house I chanced to find a volume of the works he which theory the ;apathy with it opened I .Agrippa Cornelius of attempts to demonstrate and the wonderful facts which he relates to seemed light new A .enthusiasm into feeling this changed soon dawn upon my mind, and bounding with joy, I communicated my title the at carelessly looked father My .father my to discovery page of my book and said, "Ah! Cornelius Agrippa! My dear Victor, ".trash sad is it ;this upon time your waste not do

If, instead of this remark, my father had taken the pains to entirely been had Agrippa of principles the that me to explain exploded and that a modern system of science had been introduced the because ,ancient the than powers greater much possessed which powers of the latter were chimerical, while those of the former certainty should I circumstances such under ,practical and real were have thrown Agrippa aside and have contented my imagination, .studies former my to ardour greater with returning by ,was it as warmed It is even possible that the train of my ideas would never .ruin my to led that impulse fatal the received have But the cursory glance my father had taken of my volume ,contents its with acquainted was he that me assured means no by and I continued to read with the greatest avidity. When I returned home and ,author this of works whole the procure to was care first my

Frankenstein

afterwards of Paracelsus and Albertus Magnus. I read and studied me to appeared they ;delight with writers these of fancies wild the treasures known to few besides myself. I have described myself as the penetrate to longing fervent a with imbued been having always secrets of nature. In spite of the intense labour and wonderful studies my from came always I ,philosophers modern of discoveries discontented and unsatisfied. Sir Isaac Newton is said to have great the beside shells up picking child a like felt he that avowed and unexplored ocean of truth. Those of his successors in each appeared acquainted was I whom with philosophy natural of branch even to my boy's apprehensions as tyros engaged in the same pursuit.

The untaught peasant beheld the elements around him and was acquainted .more little knew philosopher learned most The .uses practical their with He had partially unveiled the face of Nature, but her immortal lineaments give and ,anatomize ,dissect might He .mystery a and wonder a still were names; but, not to speak of a final cause, causes in their secondary and the upon gazed had I .him to unknown utterly were grades tertiary fortifications and impediments that seemed to keep human beings from .reined had I ignorantly and rashly and ,nature of citadel the entering

But here were books, and here were men who had penetrated deeper I and ,averred they that all for word their took I .more knew and became their disciple. It may appear strange that such should routine the followed I while but ;century eighteenth the in arise of education in the schools of Geneva, I was, to a great degree, not was father My .studies favourite my to regard with -self scientific, and I was left to struggle with a child's blindness, of guidance the Under .knowledge for thirst 'student a to added my new preceptors I entered with the greatest diligence into the the but ;life of elixir the and stone 'philosopher the of search latter soon obtained my undivided attention. Wealth was an I if discovery the attend would glory what but ,object inferior could banish disease from the human frame and render man invulnerable .visions only my these were Nor !death violent a but any to The raising of ghosts or devils was a promise liberally accorded ;sought eagerly most I which of fulfillment the ,authors favourite my by and if my incantations were always unsuccessful, I attributed the failure or skill of want a to than mistake and inexperience own my to rather

Frankenstein

fidelity in my instructors. And thus for a time I was occupied by contradictory thousand a ,unadept an like ,mingling ,systems exploded theories and floundering desperately in a very slough of multifarious ,reasoning childish and imagination ardent an by guided ,knowledge till an accident again changed the current of my ideas. When I was ,Bekive near house our to retired had we old years fifteen about when we witnessed a most violent and terrible thunderstorm. burst thunder the and ,Jura of mountains the behind from advanced It at once with frightful loudness from various quarters of the heavens. with progress its watching ,lasted storm the while ,remained I curiosity and delight. As I stood at the door, on a sudden I which oak beautiful and old an from issue fire of stream a beheld stood about twenty yards from our house; and so soon as the nothing and ,disappeared had oak the ,vanished light dazzling remained but a blasted stump. When we visited it the next .manner singular a in shattered tree the found we ,morning It was not splintered by the shock, but entirely reduced to thin .destroyed utterly so anything beheld never I .wood of ribbons

Before this I was not unacquainted with the more obvious laws of electricity. ,us with was philosophy natural in research great of man a occasion this On and excited by this catastrophe, he entered on the explanation of a theory was which ,galvanism and electricity of subject the on formed had he which at once new and astonishing to me. All that he said threw greatly into lords the ,Paracelsus and ,Magnus Albertus ,Agrippa Cornelius shade the of my imagination; but by some fatality the overthrow of these men as me to seemed It .studies accustomed my pursue to me disinclined if nothing would or could ever be known. All that had so long engaged caprices those of one By .despicable grew suddenly attention my of the mind which we are perhaps most subject to in early youth, history natural down set ,occupations former my up gave once at I and all its progeny as a deformed and abortive creation, and entertained step even never could which science -would a for disdain greatest the within the threshold of real knowledge. In this mood of mind I betook to appertaining study of branches the and mathematics the to myself that science as being built upon secure foundations, and so worthy .consideration my of

Frankenstein

Thus strangely are our souls constructed, and by such slight
,back look I When .ruin or prosperity to bound we are ligaments
it seems to me as if this almost miraculous change of inclination
life my of angel guardian the of suggestion immediate the was will and
--the last effort made by the spirit of preservation to avert the
.me envelop to ready and stars the in hanging then even was that storm
Her victory was announced by an unusual tranquillity and gladness
latterly and ancient my of relinquishing the followed which soul of
tormenting studies. It was thus that I was to be taught to associate
.disregard their with happiness ,prosecution their with evil

It was a strong effort of the spirit of good, but it was ineffectual.
utter my decreed had laws immutable her and ,potent too was Destiny
and terrible destruction.

Chapter 3

When I had attained the age of seventeen my parents resolved I should go to the University of Ingolstadt to complete my education, but my father thought it necessary that I should be acquainted with other customs than those of my native country. My departure was therefore fixed early in the year. My day of departure was the first misfortune of my life. Elizabeth had been seized with the scarlet fever; her illness was severe, and she was in the greatest danger. During her illness many arguments were urged to persuade my mother to refrain from attending upon her. She yielded first to our entreaties, but when she heard that the life of her favourite was menaced, she could no longer control her attentions. She attended her sickbed with watchful anxiety, and triumphed over the malignity of the distemper--Elizabeth was saved, but the consequences of this imprudence were fatal to her. On the third day my mother sickened; her fever was accompanied by the most alarming symptoms, and the medical attendants prognosticated the worst event. On her deathbed the fortitude of women of best desert did not desert her. She joined the hands of Elizabeth and myself. "My children," she said, "my firmest hopes were placed on your union. This expectation will now be the consolation of your father. Elizabeth, my younger children, must place their supply in you; love my children, and I shall be happy. Alas! I regret that I am taken from you; and, beloved and happy as I have been, I am not these things. But all you can do is to be happy, and I as I am, I will endeavour to resign myself cheerfully to death, and leave you to meet another world with hope and indulgence."

She died calmly, and her countenance expressed affection even in death. I rent the ties that bound me to the dearest of feelings, those of feelings that I need not describe, by that most irreparable evil, the void that presents itself to the soul, long so is it. It is that despair that is exhibited on the countenance, and before the mind can persuade itself that she whom we saw every day departed, and whose part we have owned, appeared very long, and whose existence we have forever--that the brightness of a beloved eye can have been extinguished

,hushed be can ear the to dear and familiar so voice a of sound the and never more to be heard. These are the reflections of the first days; the then ,evil the of reality the proves time of lapse the when but actual bitterness of grief commences. Yet from whom has not that describe I should why And ?connection dear some away rent hand rude a sorrow which all have felt, and must feel? The time at length and ;necessity a than indulgence an rather is grief when arrives the smile that plays upon the lips, although it may be deemed a still had we but ,dead was mother My .banished not is ,sacrilege duties which we ought to perform; we must continue our course with remains one whilst fortunate ourselves think to learn and rest the whom the spoiler has not seized.

My departure for Ingolstadt, which had been deferred by these events, respite a father my from obtained I .upon determined again now was of some weeks. It appeared to me sacrilege so soon to leave the repose, .life of thick the into rush to and mourning of house the of ,death to akin I was new to sorrow, but it did not the less alarm me. I was unwilling desired I ,all above and ,me to remained that those of sight the quit to to see my sweet Elizabeth in some degree consoled.

She indeed veiled her grief and strove to act the comforter to us all. .zeal and courage with duties its assumed and life on steadily looked She She devoted herself to those whom she had been taught to call her ,time this at as enchanting so she was Never .cousins and uncle when she recalled the sunshine of her smiles and spent them upon us. .forget us make to endeavours her in regret own her even forgot She

The day of my departure at length arrived. Clerval spent the last permit to father his persuade to endeavoured had He .us with evening him to accompany me and to become my fellow student, but in vain. ruin and idleness saw and trader -narrow a was father His in the aspirations and ambition of his son. Henry deeply felt .education liberal a from debarred being of misfortune the He said little, but when he spoke I read in his kindling eye to not resolve firm but restrained a glance animated his in and be chained to the miserable details of commerce.

Frankenstein

We sat late. We could not tear ourselves away from each other nor we and ,said was It "!Farewell" word the say to ourselves persuade retired under the pretence of seeking repose, each fancying that descended I dawn 'morning at when but ;deceived was other the to the carriage which was to convey me away, they were all there ,more once hand my press to Clerval ,me bless to again father my-- my Elizabeth to renew her entreaties that I would write often and .friend and playmate her on attentions feminine last the bestow to

I threw myself into the chaise that was to convey me away and ever had who ,I .reflections melancholy most the in indulged been surrounded by amiable companions, continually engaged .alone now was --pleasure mutual bestow to endeavouring in In the university whither I was going I must form my own friends and secluded remarkably been hitherto had life My .protector own my be and domestic, and this had given me invincible repugnance to new were these ;Clerval and ,Elizabeth ,brothers my loved I .countenances "old familiar faces," but I believed myself totally unfitted for the commenced I as reflections my were Such .strangers of company my journey; but as I proceeded, my spirits and hopes rose. ,often had I .knowledge of acquisition the desired ardently I when at home, thought it hard to remain during my youth and world the enter to longed had and place one in up cooped take my station among other human beings. Now my desires were .repent to folly been have ,indeed ,would it and ,with complied

I had sufficient leisure for these and many other reflections .fatiguing and long was which ,Ingolstadt to journey my during At length the high white steeple of the town met my eyes. to apartment solitary my to conducted was and alighted I spend the evening as I pleased.

The next morning I delivered my letters of introduction and paid a the rather --Chance .professors principal the of some to visit evil influence, the Angel of Destruction, which asserted omnipotent my from steps reluctant my turned I moment the from me over sway father's door--led me first to M. Krempe, professor of natural the in imbued deeply but ,man uncouth an was He .philosophy secrets of his science. He asked me several questions concerning

Frankenstein

to appertaining science of branches different the in progress my natural philosophy. I replied carelessly, and partly in contempt, authors principal the as alchemists my of names the mentioned I had studied. The professor stared. "Have you," he said, "?nonsense such studying in time your spent really"

I replied in the affirmative. "Every minute," continued M. Krempe is books those on wasted have you that instant every" ,warmth with utterly and entirely lost. You have burdened your memory with land desert what In !God Good .names useless and systems exploded have you lived, where no one was kind enough to inform you that thousand a are imbibed greedily so have you which fancies these years old and as musty as they are ancient? I little expected, of disciple a find to ,age scientific and enlightened this in Albertus Magnus and Paracelsus. My dear sir, you must begin ".anew entirely studies your

So saying, he stepped aside and wrote down a list of several books ,procure to me desired he which philosophy natural of treating and dismissed me after mentioning that in the beginning of the upon lectures of course a commence to intended he week following natural philosophy in its general relations, and that M. Waldman, days alternate the chemistry upon lecture would ,professor fellow a that he omitted.

I returned home not disappointed, for I have said that I had long ;reprobated professor the whom useless authors those considered but I returned not at all the more inclined to recur to these studies voice gruff a with man squat little a was Krempe .M .shape any in and a repulsive countenance; the teacher, therefore, did not too a rather In .pursuits his of favour in me prepossess philosophical and connected a strain, perhaps, I have given an my in them concerning to come had I conclusions the of account early years. As a child I had not been content with the results a With .science natural of professors modern the by promised confusion of ideas only to be accounted for by my extreme youth and of steps the retrod had I ,matters such on guide a of want my knowledge along the paths of time and exchanged the discoveries of ,Besides .alchemists forgotten of dreams the for inquirers recent

Frankenstein

I had a contempt for the uses of modern natural philosophy. It was immortality sought science the of masters the when different very and power; such views, although futile, were grand; but now the limit to seemed inquirer the of ambition The .changed was scene itself to the annihilation of those visions on which my interest chimeras exchange to required was I .founded chiefly was science in of boundless grandeur for realities of little worth.

Such were my reflections during the first two or three days of my becoming in spent chiefly were which ,Ingolstadt at residence acquainted with the localities and the principal residents in my the of thought I ,commenced week ensuing the as But .abode new information which M. Krempe had given me concerning the lectures. little that hear and go to consent not could I although And conceited fellow deliver sentences out of a pulpit, I recollected had he as ,seen never had I whom ,Waldman .M of said had he what hitherto been out of town.

Partly from curiosity and partly from idleness, I went into .after shortly entered Waldman .M which ,room lecturing the This professor was very unlike his colleague. He appeared about greatest the of expressive aspect an with but ,age of years fifty benevolence; a few grey hairs covered his temples, but those at the but short was person His .black nearly were head his of back remarkably erect and his voice the sweetest I had ever heard. chemistry of history the of recapitulation a by lecture his began He and the various improvements made by different men of learning, .discoverers distinguished most the of names the fervour with pronouncing He then took a cursory view of the present state of the science few a made having After .terms elementary its of many explained and preparatory experiments, he concluded with a panegyric upon modern chemistry, this of teachers ancient The" :forget never shall I which of terms the science," said he, "promised impossibilities and performed nothing. be cannot metals that know they ;little very promise masters modern The transmuted and that the elixir of life is a chimera but these philosophers, over pore to eyes their and ,dirt in dabble to made only seem hands whose the microscope or crucible, have indeed performed miracles. They penetrate -hiding her in works she how show and nature of recesses the into They ascend into the heavens; they have discovered how the blood circulates,

Frankenstein

almost and new acquired have They .breathe we air the of nature the and unlimited powers; they can command the thunders of heaven, mimic the " .shadows own its with world invisible the mock even and ,earthquake

Such were the professor's words--rather let me say such the words my if as felt I on went he As .me destroy to --fate the of soul were grappling with a palpable enemy; one by one the various after chord ;being my of mechanism the formed which touched were keys chord was sounded, and soon my mind was filled with one thought, the exclaimed ,done been has much So .purpose one ,conception one soul of Frankenstein--more, far more, will I achieve; treading in the ,powers unknown explore ,way new a pioneer will I ,marked already steps and unfold to the world the deepest mysteries of creation.

I closed not my eyes that night. My internal being was in a state ,arise thence would order that felt I ;turmoil and insurrection of but I had no power to produce it. By degrees, after the morning's as were thoughts 'yesternight my and ,awoke I .came sleep ,dawn a dream. There only remained a resolution to return to my ancient believed I which for science a to myself devote to and studies myself to possess a natural talent. On the same day I paid and mild more even were private in manners His .visit a Waldman .M attractive than in public, for there was a certain dignity in his the by replaced was house own his in which lecture his during mien greatest affability and kindness. I gave him pretty nearly the same .professor fellow his to given had I as pursuits former my of account He heard with attention the little narration concerning my studies but ,Paracelsus and Agrippa Cornelius of names the at smiled and without the contempt that M. Krempe had exhibited. He said that philosophers modern zeal indefatigable whose to men were These" were indebted for most of the foundations of their knowledge. names new give to ,task easier an as ,us to left had They and arrange in connected classifications the facts which they .light to bringing of instruments the been had degree great a in The labours of men of genius, however erroneously directed, advantage solid the to turning ultimately in fail ever scarcely of mankind." I listened to his statement, which was delivered that added then and ,affectation or presumption any without his lecture had removed my prejudices against modern chemists;

Frankenstein

deference and modesty the with ,terms measured in myself expressed I
due from a youth to his instructor, without letting escape
the of any)ashamed me made have would life in inexperience(
enthusiasm which stimulated my intended labours. I requested
.procure to ought I books the concerning advice his

"I am happy," said M. Waldman, "to have gained a disciple; and if
.success your of doubt no have I ,ability your equals application your
Chemistry is that branch of natural philosophy in which the greatest
account that on is it ;made be may and been have improvements
that I have made it my peculiar study; but at the same time,
man A .science of branches other the neglected not have I
would make but a very sorry chemist if he attended to that
become to is wish your If .alone knowledge human of department
really a man of science and not merely a petty experimentalist,
,philosophy natural of branch every to apply to you advise should I
including mathematics." He then took me into his laboratory and
as me instructing ,machines various his of uses the me to explained
to what I ought to procure and promising me the use of his own when
derange to not science the in enough far advanced have should I
their mechanism. He also gave me the list of books which I had
.leave my took I and ,requested

Thus ended a day memorable to me; it decided my future destiny.

Chapter 4

From this day natural philosophy, and particularly chemistry, nearly became the term of sense comprehensive most the in my sole occupation. I read with ardour those works, so full written have inquirers modern which, discrimination and genius of on these subjects. I attended the lectures and cultivated the found I and, university the of science of men the of acquaintance even in M. Krempe a great deal of sound sense and real information, manners and physiognomy repulsive a with, true is it, combined but not on that account the less valuable. In M. Waldman I found his and, dogmatism by tinged never was gentleness His friend true a instructions were given with an air of frankness and good nature that smoothed he ways thousand a In pedantry of idea every banished for me the path of knowledge and made the most abstruse inquiries first at was application My apprehension my to facile and clear fluctuating and uncertain; it gained strength as I proceeded and disappeared often stars the that eager and ardent so became soon in the light of morning whilst I was yet engaged in my laboratory.

As I applied so closely, it may be easily conceived that my progress, students the of astonishment the indeed was ardour My rapid was and my proficiency that of the masters. Professor Krempe, on went Agrippa Cornelius how, smile sly a with, me asked often whilst M. Waldman expressed the most heartfelt exultation in paid I which during, manner this in passed years Two progress my no visit to Geneva, but was engaged, heart and soul, in the pursuit who those but None make to hoped I which discoveries some of have experienced them can conceive of the enticements of science. you before gone have others as far as go you studies other In and there is nothing more to know; but in a scientific pursuit moderate of mind A wonder and discovery for food continual is there capacity which closely pursues one study must infallibly arrive at the sought continually who, I and; study that in proficiency great attainment of one object of pursuit and was solely wrapped up in this, some made I years two of end the at that rapidly so improved discoveries in the improvement of some chemical instruments, university the at admiration and esteem great me procured which

Frankenstein

When I had arrived at this point and had become as well acquainted with the on depended as philosophy natural of practice and theory the with lessons of any of the professors at Ingolstadt, my residence there returning of thought I ,improvements my to conducive longer no being to my friends and my native town, when an incident happened that .stay my protracted

One of the phenomena which had peculiarly attracted my attention animal any ,indeed ,and ,frame human the of structure the was endowed with life. Whence, I often asked myself, did the which one and ,question bold a was It ?proceed life of principle has ever been considered as a mystery; yet with how many things or cowardice if ,acquainted becoming of brink the upon we are carelessness did not restrain our inquiries. I revolved these myself apply to thenceforth determined and mind my in circumstances more particularly to those branches of natural philosophy which almost an by animated been had I Unless .physiology to relate supernatural enthusiasm, my application to this study would have ,life of causes the examine To .intolerable almost and irksome been we must first have recourse to death. I became acquainted with also must I ;sufficient not was this but ,anatomy of science the observe the natural decay and corruption of the human body. precautions greatest the taken had father my education my In that my mind should be impressed with no supernatural horrors. superstition of tale a at trembled have to remember ever not do I or to have feared the apparition of a spirit. Darkness had no effect bodies of receptacle the merely me to was churchyard a and ,fancy my upon deprived of life, which, from being the seat of beauty and strength, cause the examine to led was I Now .worm the for food become had and progress of this decay and forced to spend days and nights every upon fixed was attention My -charnel and vaults in object the most insupportable to the delicacy of the human feelings. beheld I ;wasted and degraded was man of form fine the how saw I the corruption of death succeed to the blooming cheek of life; .brain and eye the of wonders the inherited worm the how saw I I paused, examining and analysing all the minutiae of causation, ,life to death and ,death to life from change the in exemplified as until from the midst of this darkness a sudden light broke in upon me I while that ,simple so yet ,wondrous and brilliant so light a--

Frankenstein

became dizzy with the immensity of the prospect which it illustrated, directed had who genius of men many so among that surprised was I their inquiries towards the same science, that I alone should be .secret a astonishing so discover to reserved

Remember, I am not recording the vision of a madman. The sun does not .true is affirm now I which that than heavens the in shine certainly more Some miracle might have produced it, yet the stages of the discovery labour incredible of nights and days After .probable and distinct were and fatigue, I succeeded in discovering the cause of generation and life; .matter lifeless upon animation bestowing of capable myself became I ,more ,nay

The astonishment which I had at first experienced on this discovery in spent time much so After .rapture and delight to place gave soon painful labour, to arrive at once at the summit of my desires was discovery this But .toils my of consummation gratifying most the was so great and overwhelming that all the steps by which I had only beheld I and ,obliterated were it to led progressively been the result. What had been the study and desire of the wisest .grasp my within now was world the of creation the since men Not that, like a magic scene, it all opened upon me at once: direct to rather nature a of was obtained had I information the my endeavours so soon as I should point them towards the object .accomplished already object that exhibit to than search my of I was like the Arabian who had been buried with the dead and found seemingly and glimmering one by only aided ,life to passage a ineffectual light.

I see by your eagerness and the wonder and hope which your eyes express, am I which with secret the of informed be to expect you that ,friend my acquainted; that cannot be; listen patiently until the end of my story, .subject that upon reserved am I why perceive easily will you and I will not lead you on, unguarded and ardent as I then was, ,me from Learn .misery infallible and destruction your to if not by my precepts, at least by my example, how dangerous is who is man that happier much how and knowledge of acquirement the believes his native town to be the world, than he who aspires to .allow will nature his than greater become

Frankenstein

When I found so astonishing a power placed within my hands, I hesitated .it employ should I which in manner the concerning time long a Although I possessed the capacity of bestowing animation, its all with ,it of reception the for frame a prepare to yet intricacies of fibres, muscles, and veins, still remained a first at doubted I .labour and difficulty inconceivable of work whether I should attempt the creation of a being like myself, was imagination my but ;organization simpler of one or too much exalted by my first success to permit me to doubt of .man as wonderful and complete as animal an to life give to ability my The materials at present within my command hardly appeared adequate should I that not doubted I but ,undertaking an arduous so to ultimately succeed. I prepared myself for a multitude of reverses; be work my last at and ,baffled incessantly be might operations my imperfect, yet when I considered the improvement which every day my hope to encouraged was I ,mechanics and science in place takes present attempts would at least lay the foundations of future success. plan my of complexity and magnitude the consider I could Nor as any argument of its impracticability. It was with these the As .being human a of creation the began I that feelings minuteness of the parts formed a great hindrance to my speed, I a of being the make to ,intention first my to contrary ,resolved gigantic stature, that is to say, about eight feet in height, and and determination this formed having After .large proportionably having spent some months in successfully collecting and arranging .began I ,materials my

No one can conceive the variety of feelings which bore me onwards, .success of enthusiasm first the in ,hurricane a like Life and death appeared to me ideal bounds, which I should first .world dark our into light of torrent a pour and ,through break A new species would bless me as its creator and source; many happy could father No .me to being their owe would natures excellent and claim the gratitude of his child so completely as I should deserve theirs. animation bestow could I if that thought I ,reflections these Pursuing upon lifeless matter, I might in process of time (although I now devoted apparently had death where life renew)impossible it found the body to corruption.

Frankenstein

These thoughts supported my spirits, while I pursued my undertaking, study with pale grown had cheek My ardour unremitting with and my person had become emaciated with confinement. Sometimes, to clung I still yet ;failed I ,certainty of brink very the on the hope which the next day or the next hour might realize. which to hope the was possessed alone I which secret One I had dedicated myself; and the moon gazed on my midnight labours, to nature pursued I ,eagerness breathless and unrelaxed with ,while her hiding-places. Who shall conceive the horrors of my secret or grave the of damp unhallowed the among dabbled I as toil tortured the living animal to animate the lifeless clay? ;remembrance the with swim eyes my and ,tremble now limbs My but then a resistless and almost frantic impulse urged me forward; .pursuit one this for but sensation or soul all lost have to seemed I It was indeed but a passing trance, that only made me feel with ,operate to ceasing stimulus unnatural the ,as soon so acuteness renewed I had returned to my old habits. I collected bones from charnel-secrets tremendous the ,fingers profane with ,disturbed and houses of the human frame. In a solitary chamber, or rather cell, at the by apartments other the all from separated and ,house the of top a gallery and staircase, I kept my workshop of filthy creation; the to attending in sockets their from starting were eyeballs my details of my employment. The dissecting room and the slaughter-turn nature human my did often and ;materials my of many furnished house with loathing from my occupation, whilst, still urged on by an eagerness .conclusion a to near work my brought I ,increased perpetually which

The summer months passed while I was thus engaged, heart and soul, bestow fields the did never ;season beautiful most a was It .pursuit one in a more plentiful harvest or the vines yield a more luxuriant vintage, feelings same the And .nature of charms the to insensible were eyes my but which made me neglect the scenes around me caused me also to forget those so for seen not had I whom and ,absent miles many so were who friends long a time. I knew my silence disquieted them, and I well remembered yourself with pleased are you while that know I" :father my of words the you will think of us with affection, and we shall hear regularly from you. correspondence your in interruption any regard I if me pardon must You as a proof that your other duties are equally neglected."

Frankenstein

I knew well therefore what would be my father's feelings, but I
myself in loathsome employment my from thoughts my tear not could
but which had taken an irresistible hold of my imagination. I
my to related that all procrastinate to ,were it as ,wished
feelings of affection until the great object, which swallowed up
.completed be should ,nature my of habit every

I then thought that my father would be unjust if he ascribed my
convinced now am I but ,part my on faultiness or vice to neglect
that he was justified in conceiving that I should not be
ought perfection in being human A .blame from free altogether
always to preserve a calm and peaceful mind and never to allow
do I .tranquillity his disturb to desire transitory a or passion
not think that the pursuit of knowledge is an exception to this rule.
to tendency a has yourself apply you which to study the If
weaken your affections and to destroy your taste for those simple
is study that then ,mix possibly can alloy no which in pleasures
certainly unlawful, that is to say, not befitting the human mind.
pursuit any allowed man no if ;observed always were rule this If
whatsoever to interfere with the tranquillity of his domestic
spared have would Caesar ,enslaved been not had Greece ,affections
his country, America would have been discovered more gradually,
.destroyed been not had Peru and Mexico of empires the and

But I forget that I am moralizing in the most interesting part of
no made father My .proceed to me remind looks your and ,tale my
reproach in his letters and only took notice of my science by
.before than particularly more occupations my into inquiring
Winter, spring, and summer passed away during my labours; but I did
before which --leaves expanding the or blossom the watch not
always yielded me supreme delight--so deeply was I engrossed in my
work my before withered had year that of leaves The .occupation
drew near to a close, and now every day showed me more plainly how
,anxiety my by checked was enthusiasm my But .succeeded had I well
and I appeared rather like one doomed by slavery to toil in the mines,
his by occupied artist an than trade unwholesome other any or
favourite employment. Every night I was oppressed by a slow fever,
of fall the ;degree painful most a to nervous became I and
a leaf startled me, and I shunned my fellow creatures as if I had

Frankenstein

wreck the at alarmed grew I Sometimes .crime a of guilty been
I perceived that I had become; the energy of my purpose alone
that believed I and ,end soon would labours my :me sustained
exercise and amusement would then drive away incipient disease; and
.complete be should creation my when these of both myself promised I

Chapter 5

It was on a dreary night of November that I beheld the almost that anxiety and With .toils my of accomplishment amounted to agony, I collected the instruments of life around me, that thing lifeless the into being of spark a infuse might I that lay at my feet. It was already one in the morning; the rain pattered ,when ,out burnt nearly was candle my and ,panes the against dimly by the glimmer of the half-extinguished light, I saw the dull convulsive a and ,hard breathed it ;open creature the of eye yellow motion agitated its limbs.

How can I describe my emotions at this catastrophe, or how had I care and pains infinite such with whom wretch the delineate endeavoured to form? His limbs were in proportion, and I had !God Great !Beautiful .beautiful as features his selected His yellow skin scarcely covered the work of muscles and arteries teeth his ;flowing and ,black lustrous a of was hair his ;beneath of a pearly whiteness; but these luxuriances only formed a more the of almost seemed that ,eyes watery his with contrast horrid same colour as the dun-white sockets in which they were set, .lips black straight and complexion shrivelled his

The different accidents of life are not so changeable as the ,years two nearly for hard worked had I .nature human of feelings for the sole purpose of infusing life into an inanimate body. it desired had I .health and rest of myself deprived had I this For with an ardour that far exceeded moderation; but now that I had horror breathless and ,vanished dream the of beauty the ,finished and disgust filled my heart. Unable to endure the aspect of the long a continued and room the of out rushed I ,created had I being time traversing my bed-chamber, unable to compose my mind to sleep. ,endured before had I tumult the to succeeded lassitude length At and I threw myself on the bed in my clothes, endeavouring to seek ,slept I ;vain in was it But .forgetfulness of moments few a indeed, but I was disturbed by the wildest dreams. I thought I saw .Ingolstadt of streets the in walking ,health of bloom the in ,Elizabeth Delighted and surprised, I embraced her, but as I imprinted the

Frankenstein

;death of hue the with livid became they ,lips her on kiss first
her features appeared to change, and I thought that I held the corpse
saw I and ,form her enveloped shroud a ;arms my in mother dead my of
the grave-worms crawling in the folds of the flannel. I started from
,chattered teeth my ,forehead my covered dew cold a ;horror with sleep my
and every limb became convulsed; when, by the dim and yellow light of the moon,
wretch the beheld I ,shutters window the through way its forced it as
--the miserable monster whom I had created. He held up the curtain of the bed;
,opened jaws His .me on fixed were ,called be may they eyes if ,eyes his and
and he muttered some inarticulate sounds, while a grin wrinkled his cheeks.
,out stretched was hand one ;hear not did I but ,spoken have might He
seemingly to detain me, but I escaped and rushed downstairs.
,inhabited I which house the to belonging courtyard the in refuge took I
where I remained during the rest of the night, walking up and down in the
sound each fearing and catching ,attentively listening ,agitation greatest
as if it were to announce the approach of the demoniacal corpse to which
.life given miserably so had I

Oh! No mortal could support the horror of that countenance. A mummy
.wretch that as hideous so be not could animation with endued again
I had gazed on him while unfinished; he was ugly then, but when
,motion of capable rendered were joints and muscles those
it became a thing such as even Dante could not have conceived.

I passed the night wretchedly. Sometimes my pulse beat so quickly
,others at ;artery every of palpitation the felt I that hardly and
I nearly sank to the ground through languor and extreme weakness.
;disappointment of bitterness the felt I ,horror this with Mingled
dreams that had been my food and pleasant rest for so long a space
,rapid so was change the and ;me to hell a become now were
the overthrow so complete!

Morning, dismal and wet, at length dawned and discovered to my
white its ,Ingolstadt of church the eyes aching and sleepless
steeple and clock, which indicated the sixth hour. The porter
,asylum my been night that had which ,court the of gates the opened
and I issued into the streets, pacing them with quick steps, as if
the of turning every feared I whom wretch the avoid to sought I
street would present to my view. I did not dare return to the

Frankenstein

,on hurry to impelled felt but ,inhabited I which apartment
although drenched by the rain which poured from a black and
.sky comfortless

I continued walking in this manner for some time, endeavouring
.mind my upon weighed that load the ease to exercise bodily by
I traversed the streets without any clear conception of where I was
,fear of sickness the in palpitated heart My .doing was I what or
and I hurried on with irregular steps, not daring to look about me:

Like one who, on a lonely road,
,dread and fear in walk Doth
And, having once turned round, walks on,
;head his more no turns And
Because he knows a frightful fiend
.tread him behind close Doth

[Coleridge's "Ancient Mariner."]

Continuing thus, I came at length opposite to the inn at which the
,paused I Here .stopped usually carriages and diligences various
I knew not why; but I remained some minutes with my eyes fixed on
.street the of end other the from me towards coming was that coach a
As it drew nearer I observed that it was the Swiss diligence;
,opened being door the on and ,standing was I where just stopped it
I perceived Henry Clerval, who, on seeing me, instantly sprung out.
!you see to am I glad how" ,he exclaimed " ,Frankenstein dear My"
How fortunate that you should be here at the very moment of my alighting!"

Nothing could equal my delight on seeing Clerval; his presence
those all and ,Elizabeth ,father my thoughts my to back brought
scenes of home so dear to my recollection. I grasped his hand,
,suddenly felt I ;misfortune and horror my forgot moment a in and
and for the first time during many months, calm and serene joy.
we and ,manner cordial most the in ,therefore ,friend my welcomed I
walked towards my college. Clerval continued talking for some time
permitted being in fortune good own his and friends mutual our about

Frankenstein

to come to Ingolstadt. "You may easily believe," said he, all that father my persuade to difficulty the was great how" necessary knowledge was not comprised in the noble art of the to incredulous him left I believe I ,indeed ,and ;bookkeeping last, for his constant answer to my unwearied entreaties was the :Wakefield of Vicar The in schoolmaster Dutch the of that as same `I have ten thousand florins a year without Greek, I eat heartily his overcame length at me for affection his But '.Greek without dislike of learning, and he has permitted me to undertake a voyage ".knowledge of land the to discovery of

"It gives me the greatest delight to see you; but tell me how you ".Elizabeth and ,brothers ,father my left

"Very well, and very happy, only a little uneasy that they hear upon little a you lecture to mean I ,by the By .seldom so you from their account myself. But, my dear Frankenstein," continued he, remark before not did I" ,face my in full gazing and short stopping how very ill you appear; so thin and pale; you look as if you had ".nights several for watching been

"You have guessed right; I have lately been so deeply engaged ,rest sufficient myself allowed not have I that occupation one in as you see; but I hope, I sincerely hope, that all these employments ".free length at am I that and end an at now are

I trembled excessively; I could not endure to think of, and far .night preceding the of occurrences the ,to allude to less I walked with a quick pace, and we soon arrived at my college. creature the that ,shiver me made thought the and ,reflected then I whom I had left in my apartment might still be there, alive and feared I but ,monster this behold to dreaded I .about walking still more that Henry should see him. Entreating him, therefore, up darted I ,stairs the of bottom the at minutes few a remain to towards my own room. My hand was already on the lock of the door shivering cold a and ,paused then I .myself recollected I before came over me. I threw the door forcibly open, as children are for waiting in stand to spectre a expect they when do to accustomed them on the other side; but nothing appeared. I stepped fearfully in:

Frankenstein

its from freed also was bedroom my and ,empty was apartment the hideous guest. I could hardly believe that so great a good fortune had enemy my that assured became I when but ,me befallen have could indeed fled, I clapped my hands for joy and ran down to Clerval.

We ascended into my room, and the servant presently brought breakfast; that only joy not was It .myself contain to unable was I but possessed me; I felt my flesh tingle with excess of sensitiveness, instant single a for remain to unable was I .rapidly beat pulse my and in the same place; I jumped over the chairs, clapped my hands, spirits unusual my attributed first at Clerval .aloud laughed and to joy on his arrival, but when he observed me more attentively, ,loud my and ,account not could he which for eyes my in wildness a saw he unrestrained, heartless laughter frightened and astonished him.

"My dear Victor," cried he, "what, for God's sake, is the matter? cause the is What !are you ill How .manner that in laugh not Do of all this?"

"Do not ask me," cried I, putting my hands before my eyes, for I .tell can HE" ;room the into glide spectre dreaded the saw I thought Oh, save me! Save me!" I imagined that the monster seized me; .fit a in down fell and furiously struggled I

Poor Clerval! What must have been his feelings? A meeting, .bitterness to turned strangely so ,joy such with anticipated he which But I was not the witness of his grief, for I was lifeless and did not .time long ,long a for senses my recover

This was the commencement of a nervous fever which confined me .nurse only my was Henry time that all During .months several for I afterwards learned that, knowing my father's advanced age and would sickness my wretched how and ,journey a long so for unfitness make Elizabeth, he spared them this grief by concealing the extent and kind more a have not could I that knew He .disorder my of attentive nurse than himself; and, firm in the hope he felt of ,harm doing of instead ,that doubt not did he ,recovery my he performed the kindest action that he could towards them.

Frankenstein

But I was in reality very ill, and surely nothing but the unbounded
.life to me restored have could friend my of attentions unremitting and
The form of the monster on whom I had bestowed existence was
.him concerning incessantly raved I and ,eyes my before forever
Doubtless my words surprised Henry; he at first believed them to be
with pertinacity the but ,imagination disturbed my of wanderings the
which I continually recurred to the same subject persuaded him that my
.event terrible and uncommon some to origin its owed indeed disorder

By very slow degrees, and with frequent relapses that alarmed and
became I time first the remember I .recovered I ,friend my grieved
capable of observing outward objects with any kind of pleasure,
the that and disappeared had leaves fallen the that perceived I
young buds were shooting forth from the trees that shaded my window.
my to greatly contributed season the and ,spring divine a was It
convalescence. I felt also sentiments of joy and affection revive
as became I time short a in and ,disappeared gloom my ;bosom my in
cheerful as before I was attacked by the fatal passion.

"Dearest Clerval," exclaimed I, "how kind, how very good you are to me.
,yourself promised you as ,study in spent being of instead ,winter whole This
has been consumed in my sick room. How shall I ever repay you? I feel the
,occasion the been have I which of disappointment the for remorse greatest
but you will forgive me."

"You will repay me entirely if you do not discompose yourself,
such in appear you since and ;can you as fast as well get but
good spirits, I may speak to you on one subject, may I not?"

I trembled. One subject! What could it be? Could he allude to an
said " ,yourself Compose" ?think even not dared I whom on object
Clerval, who observed my change of colour, "I will not mention it
happy very be would cousin and father your but ;you agitates it if
if they received a letter from you in your own handwriting. They
".silence long your at uneasy are and been have you ill how know hardly

"Is that all, my dear Henry? How could you suppose that my first
love I whom friends dear ,dear those towards fly not would thought
and who are so deserving of my love?"

Frankenstein

"If this is your present temper, my friend, you will perhaps be
;you for days some here lying been has that letter a see to glad
it is from your cousin, I believe."

Chapter 6

Clerval then put the following letter into my hands. It was from Elizabeth's own hand

"My dearest Cousin,

"You have been ill, very ill, and even the constant letters of your account to me do not sufficiently reassure me. You are forbidden to write--to hold a pen; yet one word from you, long as it may be, is necessary to our calm. I have thought that each post would bring this line, and my persuasions have restrained me from journeying to Ingolstadt to prevent his encountering the inconveniences and perhaps dangers to which he would be exposed. I have often regretted that I have not been able to perform it myself! I figure to myself that the task of attending on your sickbed has devolved on some old mercenary nurse who never could minister to them with the care and affection that writes to you now. Yet your poor cousin is indeed getting better. I eagerly hope that you will soon confirm this intelligence with your own handwriting.

"Get well--and return to us. You will find a happy, cheerful home, and your father and dear friends and he asks but to see you, but to be assured that you are well; and his benevolent countenance will ever care not for a cloud. How pleased you would be to remark the improvement of our Ernest! He is now sixteen and full of spirit and activity. He is desirous to be a true Swiss and to enter into foreign service, but we cannot part with him until at least his elder brother returns. My uncle is not pleased with the idea of a military career in a distant country; your powers had never been applied to study as an odious fetter; his time is spent in the open air on rowing or climbing hills. He will become an idler unless we yield the point and permit him to enter the profession which he has selected.

"Little alteration, except the growth of our dear children,

-snow and lake blue The .us left you since place taken has mountains--they never change; and I think our placid home and .laws immutable same the by regulated are hearts contented our My trifling occupations take up my time and amuse me, and I am faces kind ,happy but none seeing by exertions any for rewarded around me. Since you left us, but one change has taken place in Justine occasion what on remember you Do .household little our Moritz entered our family? Probably you do not; I will relate her ,mother her ,Moritz Madame .words few a in therefore ,history was a widow with four children, of whom Justine was the third. a through but ,father her of favourite the been always had girl This strange perversity, her mother could not endure her, and after the ,this observed aunt My .ill very her treated ,Moritz .M of death and when Justine was twelve years of age, prevailed on her mother institutions republican The .house our at live to her allow to of our country have produced simpler and happier manners than .it surround that monarchies great the in prevail which those Hence there is less distinction between the several classes poor so neither being ,orders lower the and ;inhabitants its of nor so despised, their manners are more refined and moral. servant a as thing same the mean not does Geneva in servant A in France and England. Justine, thus received in our family, our in ,which condition a ,servant a of duties the learned fortunate country, does not include the idea of ignorance .being human a of dignity the of sacrifice a and

"Justine, you may remember, was a great favourite of yours; and I one ,humour ill an in were you if that remarked once you recollect glance from Justine could dissipate it, for the same reason that so looked --Angelica of beauty the concerning gives Ariosto frank-hearted and happy. My aunt conceived a great attachment superior education an her give to induced was she which by ,her for to that which she had at first intended. This benefit was fully :world the in creature little grateful most the was Justine ;repaid I do not mean that she made any professions I never heard one pass her adored almost she that eyes her by see could you but ,lips her protectress. Although her disposition was gay and in many respects gesture every to attention greatest the paid she yet ,inconsiderate of my aunt. She thought her the model of all excellence and endeavoured

Frankenstein

often she now even that so ,manners and phraseology her imitate to reminds me of her.

"When my dearest aunt died every one was too much occupied in their her during her attended had who ,Justine poor notice to grief own illness with the most anxious affection. Poor Justine was very ill; .her for reserved were trials other but

"One by one, her brothers and sister died; and her mother, .childless left was ,daughter neglected her of exception the with The conscience of the woman was troubled; she began to think heaven from judgement a was favourites her of deaths the that to chastise her partiality. She was a Roman Catholic; and I .conceived had she which idea the confirmed confessor her believe Accordingly, a few months after your departure for Ingolstadt, !girl Poor .mother repentant her by home called was Justine She wept when she quitted our house; she was much altered since winning a and softness given had grief ;aunt my of death the mildness to her manners, which had before been remarkable for vivacity. restore to nature a of house 'mother her at residence her was Nor her gaiety. The poor woman was very vacillating in her repentance. much but ,unkindness her forgive to Justine begged sometimes She oftener accused her of having caused the deaths of her brothers into Moritz Madame threw length at fretting Perpetual .sister and a decline, which at first increased her irritability, but she is now ,weather cold of approach first the on died She .ever for peace at at the beginning of this las winter. Justine has just returned to us; ,gentle and clever very is She .tenderly her love I you assure I and and extremely pretty; as I mentioned before, her mein and her .aunt dear my of me remind continually expression

"I must say also a few words to you, my dear cousin, of little ,age his of tall very is he ;him see could you wish I .William darling with sweet laughing blue eyes, dark eyelashes, and curling hair. are which ,cheek each on appear dimples little two ,smiles he When rosy with health. He has already had one or two little WIVES, five of girl little pretty a ,favourite his is Biron Louisa but years of age.

Frankenstein

"Now, dear Victor, I dare say you wish to be indulged in a little Miss pretty The .Geneva of people good the concerning gossip Mansfield has already received the congratulatory visits on her .Esq ,Melbourne John ,Englishman young a with marriage approaching Her ugly sister, Manon, married M. Duvillard, the rich banker, suffered has ,Manoir Louis ,schoolfellow favourite Your .autumn last several misfortunes since the departure of Clerval from Geneva. on be to reported is and ,spirits his recovered already has he But the point of marrying a lively pretty Frenchwoman, Madame Tavernier. ,admired much very is she but ;Manoir than older much and ,widow a is She and a favourite with everybody.

"I have written myself into better spirits, dear cousin; but my ,Victor dearest ,Write .conclude I as me upon returns anxiety one line--one word will be a blessing to us. Ten thousand thanks we ;letters many his and ,affection his ,kindness his for Henry to are sincerely grateful. Adieu! my cousin; take care of your self; !write ,you entreat I ,and

Elizabeth Lavenza.

Geneva, March 18, 17--,

"Dear, dear Elizabeth!" I exclaimed, when I had read her letter: ".feel must they anxiety the from them relieve and instantly write will I" I wrote, and this exertion greatly fatigued me; but my convalescence able was I fortnight another In .regularly proceeded and ,commenced had to leave my chamber.

One of my first duties on my recovery was to introduce Clerval to underwent I ,this doing In .university the of professors several the a kind of rough usage, ill befitting the wounds that my mind had sustained. of beginning the and ,labours my of end the ,night fatal the since Ever my misfortunes, I had conceived a violent antipathy even to the name ,health to restored quite otherwise was I When .philosophy natural of the sight of a chemical instrument would renew all the agony of apparatus my all removed had and ,this saw Henry .symptoms nervous my from my view. He had also changed my apartment; for he perceived that I

.laboratory my been previously had which room the for dislike a acquired had
 But these cares of Clerval were made of no avail when I visited the professors.
 ,warmth and kindness with ,praised he when torture inflicted Waldman .M
 the astonishing progress I had made in the sciences. He soon perceived
 ,cause real the guessing not but ;subject the disliked I that
 he attributed my feelings to modesty, and changed the subject from
 ,saw evidently I as ,desire a with ,itself science the to ,improvement my
 of drawing me out. What could I do? He meant to please, and he tormented me.
 instruments those five my in ,one by one ,carefully placed had he if as felt I
 which were to be afterwards used in putting me to a slow and cruel death.
 .felt I pain the exhibit not dared yet ,words his under writhed I
 Clerval, whose eyes and feelings were always quick in discerning
 ,excuse in ,alleging ,subject the declined ,others of sensations the
 his total ignorance; and the conversation took a more general turn.
 plainly saw I .speak not did I but ,heart my from friend my thanked I
 that he was surprised, but he never attempted to draw my secret from me;
 reverence and affection of mixture a with him loved I although and
 that knew no bounds, yet I could never persuade myself to confide
 ,recollection my to present often so was which event that him in
 but which I feared the detail to another would only impress more deeply.

M. Krempe was not equally docile; and in my condition at that time,
 encomiums blunt harsh his ,sensitiveness insupportable almost of
 gave me even more pain than the benevolent approbation of M. Waldman.
 has he you assure I ,Clerval .M ,why" ;he cried "!fellow the --D"
 outstript us all. Ay, stare if you please; but it is nevertheless true.
 Agrippa Cornelius in believed ,ago years few a but ,who youngster A
 as firmly as in the gospel, has now set himself at the head of
 all shall we ,down pulled soon not is he if and ;university the
 be out of countenance. --Ay, ay," continued he, observing my face
 excellent an ;modest is Frankenstein .M" ,suffering of expressive
 quality in a young man. Young men should be diffident of themselves,
 out wears that but ;young when myself was I :Clerval .M ,know you
 in a very short time."

M. Krempe had now commenced an eulogy on himself, which happily
 .me to annoying so was that subject a from conversation the turned

Clerval had never sympathized in my tastes for natural science; and his
 .me occupied had which those from wholly differed pursuits literary
 He came to the university with the design of making himself
 open should he thus and ,languages oriental the of master complete
 a field for the plan of life he had marked out for himself.
 eyes his turned he ,career inglorious no pursue to Resolved
 toward the East, as affording scope for his spirit of enterprise.
 ,attention his engaged languages Sanscrit and ,Arabic ,Persian The
 and I was easily induced to enter on the same studies. Idleness had
 ,reflection from fly to wished I that now and ,me to irksome been ever
 and hated my former studies, I felt great relief in being the
 instruction only not found and ,friend my with -fellow
 but consolation in the works of the orientalist. I did not,
 ,dialects their of knowledge critical a attempt ,him like
 for I did not contemplate making any other use of them than
 ,meaning their understand to merely read I .amusement temporary
 and they well repaid my labours. Their melancholy is soothing,
 studying in experienced never I degree a to ,elevating joy their and
 the authors of any other country. When you read their writings,
 ,roses of garden a and sun warm a in consist to appears life
 --in the smiles and frowns of a fair enemy, and the fire that consumes
 of poetry heroical and manly the from different How .heart own your
 Greece and Rome!

Summer passed away in these occupations, and my return to Geneva
 by delayed being but ;autumn of end latter the for fixed was
 several accidents, winter and snow arrived, the roads were deemed
 .spring ensuing the until retarded was journey my and ,impassable
 I felt this delay very bitterly; for I longed to see my native town
 ,long so delayed been only had return My .friends beloved my and
 from an unwillingness to leave Clerval in a strange place, before
 ,winter The .inhabitants its of any with acquainted become had he
 however, was spent cheerfully; and although the spring was
 its for compensated beauty its came it when ,late uncommonly
 dilatoriness.

The month of May had already commenced, and I expected the letter
 proposed Henry when ,departure my of date the fix to was which daily
 a pedestrian tour in the environs of Ingolstadt, that I might bid

.inhabited long so had I country the to farewell personal a
I acceded with pleasure to this proposition: I was fond of exercise,
ramble the in companion favourite my been always had Clerval and
of this nature that I had taken among the scenes of my native country.

We passed a fortnight in these perambulations: my health and
additional gained they and ,restored been long had spirits
strength from the salubrious air I breathed, the natural
.friend my of conversation the and ,progress our of incidents
Study had before secluded me from the intercourse of my fellow-
the forth called Clerval but ;unsocial me rendered and ,creatures
better feelings of my heart; he again taught me to love the aspect
!friend Excellent .children of faces cheerful the and ,nature of
how sincerely you did love me, and endeavour to elevate my mind
had pursuit selfish A .own your with level a on was it until
cramped and narrowed me, until your gentleness and affection
,who creature happy same the became I ;senses my opened and warmed
a few years ago, loved and beloved by all, had no sorrow or care.
the me on bestowing of power the had nature inanimate ,happy When
most delightful sensations. A serene sky and verdant fields filled
of flowers the ;divine indeed was season present The .ecstasy with me
spring bloomed in the hedges, while those of summer were already in bud.
had year preceding the during which thoughts by undisturbed was I
pressed upon me, notwithstanding my endeavours to throw them off,
.burden invincible an with

Henry rejoiced in my gaiety, and sincerely sympathised in my feelings:
that sensations the expressed he while ,me amuse to himself exerted he
filled his soul. The resources of his mind on this occasion were
;imagination of full was conversation his :astonishing truly
and very often, in imitation of the Persian and Arabic writers,
times other At .passion and fancy wonderful of tales invented he
he repeated my favourite poems, or drew me out into arguments,
college our to returned We .ingenuity great with supported he which
on a Sunday afternoon: the peasants were dancing, and every one we met
along bounded I and ,high were spirits own My .happy and gay appeared
with feelings of unbridled joy and hilarity.

Chapter 7

On my return, I found the following letter from my father: --

"My dear Victor,

"You have probably waited impatiently for a letter to fix the date
a only write to tempted first at was I and ;us to return your of
few lines, merely mentioning the day on which I should expect you.
.it do not dare I and ,kindness cruel a be would that But
What would be your surprise, my son, when you expected a happy
?wretchedness and tears ,contrary the on ,behold to ,welcome glad and
And how, Victor, can I relate our misfortune? Absence cannot have
inflict I shall how and ;griefs and joys our to callous you rendered
pain on my long absent son? I wish to prepare you for the woeful news,
page the over skims eye your now even ;impossible is it know I but
to seek the words which are to convey to you the horrible tidings.

"William is dead!--that sweet child, whose smiles delighted and
is he ,Victor !gay so yet ,gentle so was who ,heart my warmed
murdered!

"I will not attempt to console you; but will simply relate the
.transaction the of circumstances

"Last Thursday (May 7th), I, my niece, and your two brothers,
,serene and warm was evening The .Plainpalais in walk to went
and we prolonged our walk farther than usual. It was already dusk
that discovered we then and ;returning of thought we before
William and Ernest, who had gone on before, were not to be found.
.return should they until seat a on rested accordingly We
Presently Ernest came, and enquired if we had seen his brother;
away run had William that ,him with playing been had he that ,said he
to hide himself, and that he vainly sought for him, and afterwards
.return not did he that but ,time long a for waited

Frankenstein

"This account rather alarmed us, and we continued to search for him
have might he that conjectured Elizabeth when ,fell night until
returned to the house. He was not there. We returned again, with
had boy sweet my that thought I when ,rest not could I for ;torches
lost himself, and was exposed to all the damps and dews of night;
morning the in five About .anguish extreme suffered also Elizabeth
I discovered my lovely boy, whom the night before I had seen blooming
;motionless and livid grass the on stretched ,health in active and
the print of the murder's finger was on his neck.

"He was conveyed home, and the anguish that was visible in
very was She .Elizabeth to secret the betrayed countenance my
earnest to see the corpse. At first I attempted to prevent her
hastily ,lay it where room the entering and ,persisted she but
examined the neck of the victim, and clasping her hands exclaimed,
"!child darling my murdered have I !God O`

"She fainted, and was restored with extreme difficulty. When she
that that ,me told She .sigh and weep to only was it ,lived again
same evening William had teased her to let him wear a very valuable
,gone is picture This .mother your of possessed she that miniature
and was doubtless the temptation which urged the murderer to the deed.
discover to exertions our although ,present at him of trace no have We
him are unremitted; but they will not restore my beloved William!

"Come, dearest Victor; you alone can console Elizabeth. She weeps
;death his of cause the as unjustly herself accuses and ,continually
her words pierce my heart. We are all unhappy; but will not that be
?comforter our be and return to ,son my ,you for motive additional an
Your dear mother! Alas, Victor! I now say, Thank God she did not live
!darling youngest her of death miserable ,cruel the witness to

"Come, Victor; not brooding thoughts of vengeance against
,gentleness and peace of feelings with but ,assassin the
that will heal, instead of festering, the wounds of our minds.
and kindness with but ,friend my ,mourning of house the Enter
affection for those who love you, and not with hatred for your enemies.

Frankenstein

"Your affectionate and afflicted father,

"Alphonse Frankenstein.

"Geneva, May 12th, 17--."

Clerval, who had watched my countenance as I read this letter, first at I joy the succeeded that despair the observe to surprised was expressed on receiving new from my friends. I threw the letter on the .hands my with face my covered and ,table

"My dear Frankenstein," exclaimed Henry, when he perceived me weep ,friend dear My ?unhappy be to always you are" ,bitterness with what has happened?"

I motioned him to take up the letter, while I walked up and down the from gushed also Tears .agitation extremest the in room the eyes of Clerval, as he read the account of my misfortune.

"I can offer you no consolation, my friend," said he;
"?do to intend you do What .irreparable is disaster your"

"To go instantly to Geneva: come with my, Henry, to order the horses."

During our walk, Clerval endeavoured to say a few words of consolation; ,he said "!William Poor" .sympathy heartfelt his express only could he dear lovely child, he now sleeps with his angel mother! Who that had his over weep must but ,beauty young his in joyous and bright him seen untimely loss! To die so miserably; to feel the murderer's grasp! !innocence radiant destroy could that murdered a more much How Poor little fellow! one only consolation have we; his friends mourn and weep, .ever for end an at are sufferings his ,over is pang The .rest at is he but A sod covers his gentle form, and he knows no pain. He can no longer be ".survivors miserable his for that reserve must we ;pity for subject a

Frankenstein

Clerval spoke thus as we hurried through the streets; the words impressed
.solitude in afterwards them remembered I and mind my on themselves
But now, as soon as the horses arrived, I hurried into a cabriolet,
.friend my to farewell bade and

My journey was very melancholy. At first I wished to hurry on,
;friends sorrowing and loved my with sympathise and console to longed I for
but when I drew near my native town, I slackened my progress.
crowded that feelings of multitude the sustain hardly could I
into my mind. I passed through scenes familiar to my youth,
altered How .years six nearly for seen not had I which but
every thing might be during that time! One sudden and desolating
circumstances little thousand a but ;place taken had change
might have by degrees worked other alterations, which, although
.decisive less the be not might ,tranquilly more done were they
Fear overcame me; I dared no advance, dreading a thousand nameless
.them define to unable was I although ,tremble me made that evils
I remained two days at Lausanne, in this painful state of mind.
;calm was around all ;placid were waters the :lake the contemplated I
and the snowy mountains, `the palaces of nature,' were not changed.
continued I and ,me restored scene heavenly and calm the degrees By
my journey towards Geneva.

The road ran by the side of the lake, which became narrower as I
black the distinctly more discovered I .town native my approached
sides of Jura, and the bright summit of Mont Blanc. I wept like a child.
?wanderer your welcome you do how !lake beautiful own my !mountains Dear"
Your summits are clear; the sky and lake are blue and placid.
"?unhappiness my at mock to or ,peace prognosticate to this Is

I fear, my friend, that I shall render myself tedious by dwelling
of days were they but ;circumstances preliminary these on
comparative happiness, and I think of them with pleasure.
the tell can native a but who !country beloved my ,country My
delight I took in again beholding thy streams, thy mountains,
!lake lovely thy ,all than more ,and

Frankenstein

Yet, as I drew nearer home, grief and fear again overcame me. dark the see hardly could I when and ;around closed also Night mountains, I felt still more gloomily. The picture appeared a vast destined was I that obscurely foresaw I and ,evil of scene dim and to become the most wretched of human beings. Alas! I prophesied the all in that ,circumstance single one in only failed and ,truly misery I imagined and dreaded, I did not conceive the hundredth completely was It .endure to destined was I anguish the of part dark when I arrived in the environs of Geneva; the gates of the town ,Secheron at night the pass to obliged was I and ;shut already were a village at the distance of half a league from the city. to resolved I ,rest to unable was I as ,and ;serene was sky The visit the spot where my poor William had been murdered. As I could boat a in lake the cross to obliged was I ,town the through pass not to arrive at Plainpalais. During this short voyage I saw the lightning .figures beautiful most the in Blanc Mont of summit the on playing The storm appeared to approach rapidly, and, on landing, I ascended ;advanced It .progress its observe might I that ,hill low a the heavens were clouded, and I soon felt the rain coming .increased quickly violence its but ,drops large in slowly

I quitted my seat, and walked on, although the darkness and storm crash terrific a with burst thunder the and ,minute every increased over my head. It was echoed from Saleve, the Juras, and the Alps illuminating ,eyes my dazzled lightning of flashes vivid ;Savoy of the lake, making it appear like a vast sheet of fire; then for an eye the until ,darkness pitchy a of seemed thing every instant recovered itself from the preceding flash. The storm, as is often the .heavens the of parts various in once at appeared ,Switzerland in case The most violent storm hung exactly north of the town, promontory the between lies which lake the of part the over of Belvrie and the village of Copet. Another storm enlightened sometimes and darkened another and ;flashes faint with Jura disclosed the Mole, a peaked mountain to the east of the lake.

While I watched the tempest, so beautiful yet terrific, I sky the in war noble This .step hasty a with on wandered elevated my spirits; I clasped my hands, and exclaimed aloud, "!dirge thy this ,funeral thy is this !angel dear ,William"

Frankenstein

As I said these words, I perceived in the gloom a figure which
fixed stood I ;me near trees of clump a behind from stole
gazing intently: I could not be mistaken. A flash of lightning
;me to plainly shape its discovered and ,object the illuminated
its gigantic stature, and the deformity of its aspect more hideous
wretch the was it that me informed instantly ,humanity to belongs than
the filthy daemon, to whom I had given life. What did he there?
?brother my of murderer the)conception the at shuddered I(be he Could
No sooner did that idea cross my imagination, than I became convinced of
tree a against lean to forced was I and ,chattered teeth my ;truth its
for support. The figure passed me quickly, and I lost it in the gloom.

Nothing in human shape could have destroyed the fair child.
presence mere The .it doubt not could I !murderer the was HE
of the idea was an irresistible proof of the fact. I thought
vain in been have would it but ;devil the pursuing of
for another flash discovered him to me hanging among the rocks
hill a ,Saleve Mont of ascent perpendicular nearly the of
that bounds Plainpalais on the south. He soon reached the summit,
.disappeared and

I remained motionless. The thunder ceased; but the rain still
.darkness impenetrable an in enveloped was scene the and ,continued
I revolved in my mind the events which I had until now sought to forget:
appearance the ;creation the toward progress my of train whole the
of the works of my own hands at my bedside; its departure.
which on night the since elapsed nearly now had years Two
he first received life; and was this his first crime? Alas!
delight whose ,wretch depraved a world the into loose turned had I
was in carnage and misery; had he not murdered my brother?

No one can conceive the anguish I suffered during the remainder of
did I But .air open the in ,wet and cold ,spent I which ,night the
not feel the inconvenience of the weather; my imagination was busy
had I whom being the considered I .despair and evil of scenes in
cast among mankind, and endowed with the will and power to effect
,done now had he which deed the as such ,horror of purposes
nearly in the light of my own vampire, my own spirit let loose
.me to dear was that all destroy to forced and ,grave the from

Day dawned; and I directed my steps towards the town. The gates thought first My .house 'father my to hastened I and ,open were was to discover what I knew of the murderer, and cause instant story the on reflected I when paused I But .made be to pursuit that I had to tell. A being whom I myself had formed, and endured an of precipices the among midnight at me met had ,life with inaccessible mountain. I remembered also the nervous fever with ,creation my dated I that time the at just seized been had I which and which would give an air of delirium to a tale otherwise so such communicated had other any if that knew well I .improbable utterly a relation to me, I should have looked upon it as the ravings of insanity. if even ,pursuit all elude would animal the of nature strange the ,Besides I were so far credited as to persuade my relatives to commence it. And then scaling of capable creature a arrest could Who ?pursuit be would use what of the overhanging sides of Mont Saleve? These reflections determined me, .silent remain to resolved I and

It was about five in the morning when I entered my father's house. the into went and ,family the disturb to not servants the told I library to attend their usual hour of rising.

Six years had elapsed, passed in a dream but for one indelible trace, father my embraced last had I where place same the in stood I and before my departure for Ingolstadt. Beloved and venerable parent! ,mother my of picture the on gazed I .me to remained still He which stood over the mantel-piece. It was an historical subject, Beaufort Caroline represented and ,desire 'father my at painted in an agony of despair, kneeling by the coffin of her dead father. of air an was there but ;pale cheek her and ,rustic was garb Her dignity and beauty, that hardly permitted the sentiment of pity. tears my and ;William of miniature a was picture this Below flowed when I looked upon it. While I was thus engaged, :me welcome to hastened and ,arrive me heard had he :entered Ernest "Welcome, my dearest Victor," said he. "Ah! I wish you had come joyous all us found have would you then and ,ago months three and delighted. You come to us now to share a misery which nothing ,father our revive ,hope I ,will presence you yet ;alleviate can who seems sinking under his misfortune; and your persuasions will

Frankenstein

-self tormenting and vain her cease to Elizabeth poor induce accusations. --Poor William! he was our darling and our pride!"

Tears, unrestrained, fell from my brother's eyes; a sense of mortal the imagined only had I ,Before .frame my over crept agony wretchedness of my desolated home; the reality came on me as a new, enquired I ;Ernest calm to tried I .disaster ,terrible less not a and more minutely concerning my father, and her I named my cousin.

"She most of all," said Ernest, "requires consolation; she accused her made that and ,brother my of death the caused having of herself very wretched. But since the murderer has been discovered--"

"The murderer discovered! Good God! how can that be? who could to try well as might one ;impossible is It ?him pursue to attempt overtake the winds, or confine a mountain-stream with a straw. " !night last free was he ;too him saw I

"I do not know what you mean," replied my brother, in accents of wonder, .misery our completes made have we discovery the us to but" No one would believe it at first; and even now Elizabeth will not would who ,Indeed .evidence the all notwithstanding ,convinced be credit that Justine Moritz, who was so amiable, and fond of all the family, "?crime a appalling so ,frightful so of capable so become suddenly could

"Justine Moritz! Poor, poor girl, is she the accused? But it is "?Ernest ,surely ,it believes one no ;that knows one every ;wrongfully

"No one did at first; but several circumstances came out, that have so been has behaviour own her and ;us upon conviction forced almost confused, as to add to the evidence of facts a weight that, I fear, you and ,today tried be will she But .doubt for hope no leaves will then hear all."

He then related that, the morning on which the murder of poor William bed her to confined and ,ill taken been had Justine ,discovered been had for several days. During this interval, one of the servants, ,murder the of night the on worn had she apparel the examine to happening had discovered in her pocket the picture of my mother, which had been

instantly servant The .murderer the of temptation the be to judged showed it to one of the others, who, without saying a word to any of ,deposition their upon ,and ;magistrate a to went ,family the Justine was apprehended. On being charged with the fact, measure great a in suspicion the confirmed girl poor the by her extreme confusion of manner.

This was a strange tale, but it did not shake my faith; and I .murderer the know I ;mistaken all are You" ,earnestly replied Justine, poor, good Justine, is innocent."

At that instant my father entered. I saw unhappiness deeply me welcome to endeavoured he but ,countenance his on impressed cheerfully; and, after we had exchanged our mournful greeting, ,disaster our of that than topic other some introduced have would had not Ernest exclaimed, "Good God, papa! Victor says that he ".William poor of murderer the was who knows

"We do also, unfortunately," replied my father, "for indeed I had much so discovered have than ignorant ever for been have rather depravity and ungratitude in one I valued so highly."

"My dear father, you are mistaken; Justine is innocent."

"If she is, God forbid that she should suffer as guilty. She is to be ".acquitted be will she that ,hope sincerely I ,hope I and ,today tried

This speech calmed me. I was firmly convinced in my own mind that .murder this of guiltless was ,being human every indeed and ,Justine I had no fear, therefore, that any circumstantial evidence could be one not was tale My .her convict to enough strong forward brought to announce publicly; its astounding horror would be looked upon as ,creator the ,I except ,exist indeed one any Did .vulgar the by madness who would believe, unless his senses convinced him, in the existence of had I which ignorance rash and presumption of monument living the let loose upon the world?

Frankenstein

We were soon joined by Elizabeth. Time had altered her since I the surpassing loveliness with her endowed had it ;her beheld last beauty of her childish years. There was the same candour, the same sensibility of full more expression an to allied was it but ,vivacity and intellect. She welcomed me with the greatest affection. .hope with me fills" ,she said " ,cousin dear my ,arrival Your" You perhaps will find some means to justify my poor guiltless Justine. innocence her on rely I ?crime of convicted be she if ,safe is who !Alas as certainly as I do upon my own. Our misfortune is doubly hard to us; ,girl poor this but ,boy darling lovely that lost only not have we whom I sincerely love, is to be torn away by even a worse fate. ,not will she But .more joy know shall never I ,condemned is she If I am sure she will not; and then I shall be happy again, ".William little my of death sad the after even

"She is innocent, my Elizabeth," said I, "and that shall be proved; of assurance the by cheered be spirits your let but ,nothing fear her acquittal."

"How kind and generous you are! every one else believes in her guilt, :impossible was it that knew I for ,wretched me made that and and to see every one else prejudiced in so deadly a manner .wept She ".despairing and hopeless me rendered

"Dearest niece," said my father, "dry your tears. If she is, the and ,laws our of justice the on rely ,innocent ,believe you as activity with which I shall prevent the slightest shadow of partiality."

Chapter 8

We passed a few sad hours until eleven o'clock, when the trial was to commence. My father and the rest of the family being obliged to attend as witnesses, I accompanied them to the court. During the torture which I suffered of mockery and wretchedness of the whole, it was to be decided whether the result of my curiosity and lawless devices would be the cause of the death of two beings: one a smiling babe full of innocence and joy, the other far more dreadfully murdered with every aggravation of infamy that could make the murder memorable in horror. Justine also was a girl whose life had been rendered to her by the promised merit of happiness; now all was to be obliterated in an ignominious grave, and I would rather have confessed myself guilty of the crime ascribed to Justine, but I was absent when it was committed and would have been considered as the ravings of a madman and would not have exculpated myself through the sufferings of her.

The appearance of Justine was calm. She was dressed in mourning, and her countenance was rendered always engaging by the solemnity of her feelings, exquisitely beautiful. Yet she appeared confident and execrated and on gazed although she trembled not and innocence in the eyes of thousands, for all the kindness which her beauty might otherwise have excited in the minds of the spectators was obliterated by the imagination of the enormity she was supposed to have committed. She was yet tranquil and evidently constrained by her tranquillity. She was as before and as her confusion had before been adduced as a proof of her guilt, she entered the court with a courage of appearance which worked up her mind and she threw her eyes round it and quickly discovered where we were seated. A tear seemed to dim her eye when she saw us, but she quickly recovered herself, and a look of sorrowful affection seemed to attest her utter guiltlessness.

The trial began, and after the advocate against her had stated the charge, several witnesses were called. Several strange facts combined against her which might have staggered anyone who had not such proof of her innocence. She had as I had been the whole of the night on which the murder

Frankenstein

had been committed and towards morning had been perceived by a market-woman
been had child murdered the of body the where spot the from far not
afterwards found. The woman asked her what she did there, but she looked
.answer unintelligible and confused a returned only and strangely very
She returned to the house about eight o'clock, and when one inquired
been had she that replied she ,night the passed had she where
looking for the child and demanded earnestly if anything had
into fell she ,body the shown When .him concerning heard been
violent hysterics and kept her bed for several days. The picture
;pocket her in found had servant the which produced then was
and when Elizabeth, in a faltering voice, proved that it was the
placed had she ,missed been had child the before hour an ,which same
round his neck, a murmur of horror and indignation filled the court.

Justine was called on for her defence. As the trial had proceeded,
were misery and ,horror ,Surprise .altered had countenance her
strongly expressed. Sometimes she struggled with her tears,
powers her collected she ,plead to desired was she when but
and spoke in an audible although variable voice.

"God knows," she said, "how entirely I am innocent. But I do
my rest I ;me acquit should protestations my that pretend not
innocence on a plain and simple explanation of the facts which have
always have I character the hope I and ,me against adduced been
borne will incline my judges to a favourable interpretation where
".suspicious or doubtful appears circumstance any

She then related that, by the permission of Elizabeth, she had
been had murder the which on night the of evening the passed
committed at the house of an aunt at Chene, a village situated at
'o nine about at ,return her On .Geneva from league a about
she met a man who asked her if she had seen anything of the child
several passed and account this by alarmed was She .lost was who
hours in looking for him, when the gates of Geneva were shut,
a in night the of hours several remain to forced was she and
barn belonging to a cottage, being unwilling to call up the
she night the of Most .known well was she whom to ,inhabitants
spent here watching; towards morning she believed that she slept
was It .awoke she and ,her disturbed steps some ;minutes few a for

dawn, and she quitted her asylum, that she might again endeavour to lay body his where spot the near gone had she If .brother my find it was without her knowledge. That she had been bewildered when had she since ,surprising not was -market the by questioned passed a sleepless night and the fate of poor William was yet .account no give could she picture the Concerning .uncertain

"I know," continued the unhappy victim, "how heavily and fatally of power no have I but ,me against weighs circumstance one this explaining it; and when I have expressed my utter ignorance, I am it which by probabilities the concerning conjecture to left only might have been placed in my pocket. But here also I am checked. have would surely none and ,earth on enemy no have I that believe I been so wicked as to destroy me wantonly. Did the murderer place ;doing so for him afforded opportunity no of know I ?there it or, if I had, why should he have stolen the jewel, to part with ?soon so again it

"I commit my cause to the justice of my judges, yet I see no room for hope. ,character my concerning examined witnesses few a have to permission beg I and if their testimony shall not overweigh my supposed guilt, I must ".innocence my on salvation my pledge would I although ,condemned be

Several witnesses were called who had known her for many years, and they supposed they which of crime the of hatred and fear but ;her of well spoke her guilty rendered them timorous and unwilling to come forward. Elizabeth irreproachable and dispositions excellent her ,resource last this even saw conduct, about to fail the accused, when, although violently agitated, .court the address to permission desired she

"I am," said she, "the cousin of the unhappy child who was have and by educated was I for ,sister his rather or ,murdered lived with his parents ever since and even long before his birth. on forward come to me in indecent judged be therefore may It this occasion, but when I see a fellow creature about to perish be to wish I ,friends pretended her of cowardice the through allowed to speak, that I may say what I know of her character. house same the in lived have I .accused the with acquainted well am I with her, at one time for five and at another for nearly two years.

Frankenstein

and amiable most the me to appeared she period that all During benevolent of human creatures. She nursed Madame Frankenstein, care and affection greatest the with ,illness last her in ,aunt my and afterwards attended her own mother during a tedious illness, ,her knew who all of admiration the excited that manner a in after which she again lived in my uncle's house, where she was beloved is who child the to attached warmly was She .family the all by now dead and acted towards him like a most affectionate mother. notwithstanding ,that say to hesitate not do I ,part own my For all the evidence produced against her, I believe and rely on her ;action an such for temptation no had She .innocence perfect as to the bauble on which the chief proof rests, if she had earnestly I do much so ,her to it given willingly have should I ,it desired esteem and value her."

A murmur of approbation followed Elizabeth's simple and powerful appeal, poor of favour in not and ,interference generous her by excited was it but Justine, on whom the public indignation was turned with renewed violence, Elizabeth as wept herself She .ingratitude blackest the with her charging spoke, but she did not answer. My own agitation and anguish was extreme .it knew I ;innocence her in believed I .trial whole the during Could the demon who had (I did not for a minute doubt) murdered my brother ?ignominy and death to innocent the betrayed have sport hellish his in also I could not sustain the horror of my situation, and when I perceived already had judges the of countenances the and voice popular the that condemned my unhappy victim, I rushed out of the court in agony. sustained was she ;mine equal not did accused the of tortures The by innocence, but the fangs of remorse tore my bosom and would not .hold their forgo

I passed a night of unmingled wretchedness. In the morning I went the ask not dared I .parched were throat and lips my ;court the to fatal question, but I was known, and the officer guessed the cause ,black all were they ;thrown been had ballots The .visit my of and Justine was condemned.

I cannot pretend to describe what I then felt. I had before bestow to endeavoured have I and ,horror of sensations experienced upon them adequate expressions, but words cannot convey an idea of

to person The .endured then I that despair -heart the
whom I addressed myself added that Justine had already confessed
in required hardly was" ,observed he " ,evidence That" .guilt her
so glaring a case, but I am glad of it, and, indeed, none of our
,evidence circumstantial upon criminal a condemn to like judges
be it ever so decisive."

This was strange and unexpected intelligence; what could it mean?
whole the as mad as really I was And ?me deceived eyes my Had
world would believe me to be if I disclosed the object of my
eagerly Elizabeth and ,home return to hastened I ?suspicious
demanded the result.

"My cousin," replied I, "it is decided as you may have expected;
one that than suffer should innocent ten that rather had judges all
guilty should escape. But she has confessed."

This was a dire blow to poor Elizabeth, who had relied with
shall How" .she said "!Alas" .innocence 'Justine upon firmness
I ever again believe in human goodness? Justine, whom I loved and
of smiles those on put she could how ,sister my as esteemed
innocence only to betray? Her mild eyes seemed incapable of any
".murder a committed has she yet and ,guile or severity

Soon after we heard that the poor victim had expressed a desire
that said but go to not her wished father My .cousin my see to
he left it to her own judgment and feelings to decide. "Yes," said
,Victor ,you and ;guilty is she although ,go will I" ,Elizabeth
shall accompany me; I cannot go alone." The idea of this visit was
gloomy the entered We .refuse not could I yet ,me to torture
prison chamber and beheld Justine sitting on some straw at the
.knees her on rested head her and ,manacled were hands her ;end farther
She rose on seeing us enter, and when we were left alone with her,
.bitterly weeping ,Elizabeth of feet the at herself threw she
My cousin wept also.

"Oh, Justine!" said she. "Why did you rob me of my last consolation?
,wretched very then was I although and ,innocence your on relied I
I was not so miserable as I am now."

"And do you also believe that I am so very, very wicked? Do you
"murderer as me condemn to, me crush to enemies my with join also
Her voice was suffocated with sobs.

"Rise, my poor girl," said Elizabeth; "why do you kneel, if you
,guiltless you believed I ,enemies your of one not am I ?innocent are
notwithstanding every evidence, until I heard that you had yourself
be and ;false is ,say you ,report That .guilt your declared
assured, dear Justine, that nothing can shake my confidence in you
".confession own your but ,moment a for

"I did confess, but I confessed a lie. I confessed, that I might
heart my at heavier lies falsehood that now but ;absolution obtain
than all my other sins. The God of heaven forgive me! Ever since
and threatened he ;me besieged has confessor my ,condemned was I
menaced, until I almost began to think that I was the monster that
my in fire hell and excommunication threatened He .was I said he
last moments if I continued obdurate. Dear lady, I had none to
.perdition and ignominy to doomed wretch a as me on looked all ;me support
What could I do? In an evil hour I subscribed to a lie; and now only
".miserable truly I am

She paused, weeping, and then continued, "I thought with horror,
your whom ,Justine your believe should you that ,lady sweet my
blessed aunt had so highly honoured, and whom you loved, was a creature
.perpetrated have could himself devil the but none which crime a of capable
Dear William! dearest blessed child! I soon shall see you again in heaven,
suffer to am I as going ,me consoles that and ;happy be all shall we where
ignominy and death."

"Oh, Justine! Forgive me for having for one moment distrusted you.
.fear not Do .girl dear ,mourn not do But ?confess you did Why
I will proclaim, I will prove your innocence. I will melt the
shall You .prayers and tears my by enemies your of hearts stony
not die! You, my playfellow, my companion, my sister, perish on the
".misfortune a horrible so survive could never I !No !No !scaffold

Frankenstein

Justine shook her head mournfully. "I do not fear to die," she said; courage me gives and weakness my raises God .past is pang that" to endure the worst. I leave a sad and bitter world; and if you am I ,condemned unjustly one of as me of think and me remember resigned to the fate awaiting me. Learn from me, dear lady, "!heaven of will the to patience in submit to

During this conversation I had retired to a corner of the prison room, .me possessed that anguish horrid the conceal could I where Despair! Who dared talk of that? The poor victim, who on the ,death and life between boundary awful the pass to was morrow felt not, as I did, such deep and bitter agony. I gnashed my teeth and .soul inmost my from came that groan a uttering ,together them ground Justine started. When she saw who it was, she approached me and said, believe not do ,hope I ,you ;me visit to kind very are you ,sir Dear" that I am guilty?"

I could not answer. "No, Justine," said Elizabeth; "he is more heard he when even for ,was I than innocence your of convinced that you had confessed, he did not credit it."

"I truly thank him. In these last moments I feel the sincerest sweet How .kindness with me of think who those towards gratitude is the affection of others to such a wretch as I am! It removes now peace in die could I if as feel I and ,misfortune my half than more that my innocence is acknowledged by you, dear lady, and your cousin."

Thus the poor sufferer tried to comfort others and herself. true the ,I But .desired she resignation the gained indeed She murderer, felt the never-dying worm alive in my bosom, which allowed ,unhappy was and wept also Elizabeth .consolation or hope no of but hers also was the misery of innocence, which, like a cloud tarnish cannot but hides while a for ,moon fair the over passes that its brightness. Anguish and despair had penetrated into the core .extinguish could nothing which me within hell a bore I ;heart my of We stayed several hours with Justine, and it was with great difficulty ,she cried ",wish I" .away herself tear could Elizabeth that "that I were to die with you; I cannot live in this world of misery."

Frankenstein

Justine assumed an air of cheerfulness, while she with difficulty
a in said and Elizabeth embraced She .tears bitter her repressed
voice of half-suppressed emotion, "Farewell, sweet lady, dearest
,bounty its in ,heaven may ;friend only and beloved my ,Elizabeth
bless and preserve you; may this be the last misfortune that you
".so others make and ,happy be and ,Live !suffer ever will

And on the morrow Justine died. Elizabeth's heart-rending
conviction settled their from judges the move to failed eloquence
in the criminality of the saintly sufferer. My passionate and
their received I when And .them upon lost were appeals indignant
cold answers and heard the harsh, unfeeling reasoning of these men,
proclaim might I Thus .lips my on away died avowal purposed my
myself a madman, but not revoke the sentence passed upon my
!murderess a as scaffold the on perished She .victim wretched

From the tortures of my own heart, I turned to contemplate the
!doing my was also This .Elizabeth my of grief voiceless and deep
And my father's woe, and the desolation of that late so smiling home
,ones unhappy ,weep Ye !hands -thrice my of work the was all
but these are not your last tears! Again shall you raise the
and again shall lamentations your of sound the and ,wail funeral
again be heard! Frankenstein, your son, your kinsman, your early,
for blood of drop vital each spend would who he ;friend -much
your sakes, who has no thought nor sense of joy except as it is
air the fill would who ,countenances dear your in also mirrored
with blessings and spend his life in serving you--he bids you weep,
inexorable thus if ,hopes his beyond happy ;tears countless shed to
fate be satisfied, and if the destruction pause before the peace of
!torments sad your to succeeded have grave the

Thus spoke my prophetic soul, as, torn by remorse, horror, and despair,
William of graves the upon sorrow vain spend loved I those beheld I
and Justine, the first hapless victims to my unhallowed arts.

Chapter 9

Nothing is more painful to the human mind than, after the events of succession quick a by up worked been have feelings the dead calmness of inaction and certainty which follows and rested she ,died Justine .fear and hope of both soul the deprives and I was alive. The blood flowed freely in my veins, but a weight .remove could nothing which heart my on pressed remorse and despair of Sleep fled from my eyes; I wandered like an evil spirit, for I had ,more and ,horrible description beyond mischief of deeds committed much more (I persuaded myself) was yet behind. Yet my heart overflowed benevolent with life begun had I .virtue of love the and kindness with intentions and thirsted for the moment when I should put them in practice ;blasted was all Now .beings fellow my to useful myself make and instead of that serenity of conscience which allowed me to look back promise gather to thence from and -self with past the upon of new hopes, I was seized by remorse and the sense of guilt, as such tortures intense of hell a to away me hurried which no language can describe.

This state of mind preyed upon my health, which had perhaps .sustained had it shock first the from recovered entirely never I shunned the face of man; all sound of joy or complacency was ,dark --consolation only my was solitude ;me to torture deathlike solitude.

My father observed with pain the alteration perceptible in my from deduced arguments by endeavoured and habits and disposition the feelings of his serene conscience and guiltless life to inspire dark the dispel to courage the me in awaken and fortitude with me cloud which brooded over me. "Do you think, Victor," said he, I than more child a love could one No ?also suffer not do I that" loved your brother"--tears came into his eyes as he spoke--"but is from refrain should we that survivors the to duty a not it augmenting their unhappiness by an appearance of immoderate grief? prevents sorrow excessive for ,yourself to owed duty a also is It improvement or enjoyment, or even the discharge of daily ".society for fit is man no which without ,usefulness

Frankenstein

This advice, although good, was totally inapplicable to my case; friends my console and grief my hide to first the been have should I if remorse had not mingled its bitterness, and terror its alarm, with father my answer only could I Now .sensations other my with a look of despair and endeavour to hide myself from his view.

About this time we retired to our house at Belrive. This change gates the of shutting The .me to agreeable particularly was regularly at ten o'clock and the impossibility of remaining on the of walls the within residence our rendered had hour that after lake Geneva very irksome to me. I was now free. Often, after the rest passed and boat the took I ,night the for retired had family the of many hours upon the water. Sometimes, with my sails set, I was of middle the into rowing after ,sometimes and ;wind the by carried the lake, I left the boat to pursue its own course and gave way to at was all when ,tempted often was I .reflections miserable own my peace around me, and I the only unquiet thing that wandered restless ,frogs the or ,bat some except I --heavenly and beautiful so scene a in whose harsh and interrupted croaking was heard only when I approached ,lake silent the into plunge to tempted was I ,say I --shore the that the waters might close over me and my calamities forever. But ,Elizabeth suffering and heroic the of thought I when ,restrained was I whom I tenderly loved, and whose existence was bound up in mine. by I should ;brother surviving and father my of also thought I my base desertion leave them exposed and unprotected to the malice ?them among loose let had I whom fiend the of

At these moments I wept bitterly and wished that peace would revisit .happiness and consolation them afford might I that only mind my But that could not be. Remorse extinguished every hope. I had been lest fear daily in lived I and ,evils unalterable of author the the monster whom I had created should perpetrate some new wickedness. still would he that and over not was all that feeling obscure an had I commit some signal crime, which by its enormity should almost efface so fear for scope always was There .past the of recollection the long as anything I loved remained behind. My abhorrence of this fiend ,teeth my gnashed I him of thought I When .conceived be cannot my eyes became inflamed, and I ardently wished to extinguish that

Frankenstein

his on reflected I When .bestowed thoughtlessly so had I which life crimes and malice, my hatred and revenge burst all bounds of moderation. .Andes the of peak highest the to pilgrimage a made have would I could I when there have precipitated him to their base. I wished to on abhorrence of extent utmost the wreak might I that ,again him see his head and avenge the deaths of William and Justine. Our house was the by shaken deeply was health 'father My .mourning of house the horror of the recent events. Elizabeth was sad and desponding; pleasure all ;occupations ordinary her in delight took longer no she seemed to her sacrilege toward the dead; eternal woe and tears she so innocence to pay should she tribute just the was thought then blasted and destroyed. She was no longer that happy creature who and lake the of banks the on me with wandered youth earlier in talked with ecstasy of our future prospects. The first of those ,her visited had earth the from us wean to sent are which sorrows and its dimming influence quenched her dearest smiles.

"When I reflect, my dear cousin," said she, "on the miserable death they as works its and world the see longer no I ,Moritz Justine of before appeared to me. Before, I looked upon the accounts of vice of tales as others from heard or books in read I that injustice and ancient days or imaginary evils; at least they were remote and more ,home come has misery now but ;imagination the to than reason to familiar and men appear to me as monsters thirsting for each other's blood. ;guilty be to girl poor that believed Everybody .unjust certainly am I Yet and if she could have committed the crime for which she suffered, .creatures human of depraved most the been have would she assuredly For the sake of a few jewels, to have murdered the son of her benefactor to appeared and ,birth its from nursed had she whom child a ,friend and love as if it had been her own! I could not consent to the death of any unfit creature a such thought have should I certainly but ,being human to remain in the society of men. But she was innocent. I know, .me confirms that and ,opinion same the of are you ;innocent was she feel I Alas! Victor, when falsehood can look so like the truth, who can assure edge the on walking were I if as feel I ?happiness certain of themselves of a precipice, towards which thousands are crowding and endeavouring and ,assassinated were Justine and William .abyss the into me plunge to the murderer escapes; he walks about the world free, and perhaps respected. ,crimes same the for scaffold the on suffer to condemned were I if even But

Frankenstein

I would not change places with such a wretch."

I listened to this discourse with the extremest agony. I, not in deed, my in anguish my read Elizabeth .murderer true the was ,effect in but countenance, and kindly taking my hand, said, "My dearest friend, ,me affected have events These .yourself calm must you God knows how deeply; but I am not so wretched as you are. ,revenge of sometimes and ,despair of expression an is There in your countenance that makes me tremble. Dear Victor, banish all centre who ,you around friends the Remember .passions dark these their hopes in you. Have we lost the power of rendering you happy? this in here ,other each to true are we while ,love we While !Ah land of peace and beauty, your native country, we may reap every "?peace our disturb can --blessing tranquil

And could not such words from her whom I fondly prized before every lurked that fiend the away chase to suffice fortune of gift other in my heart? Even as she spoke I drew near to her, as if in terror, .her of me rob to near been had destroyer the moment very that at least

Thus not the tenderness of friendship, nor the beauty of earth, nor love of accents very the ;woe from soul my redeem could ,heaven of were ineffectual. I was encompassed by a cloud which no beneficial fainting its dragging deer wounded The .penetrate could influence limbs to some untrodden brake, there to gaze upon the arrow which .me of type a but was ,die to and ,it pierced had

Sometimes I could cope with the sullen despair that overwhelmed me, ,seek to me drove soul my of passions whirlwind the sometimes but by bodily exercise and by change of place, some relief from my that kind this of access an during was It .sensations intolerable I suddenly left my home, and bending my steps towards the near such of eternity the ,magnificence the in sought ,valleys Alpine scenes, to forget myself and my ephemeral, because human, sorrows. .Chamounix of valley the towards directed were wanderings My I had visited it frequently during my boyhood. Six years had in changed had nought but ,wreck a was _I_ :then since passed those savage and enduring scenes.

Frankenstein

I performed the first part of my journey on horseback. I afterwards receive to liable least and -sure more the as ,mule a hired injury on these rugged roads. The weather was fine; it was about the after months two nearly ,August of month the of middle the death of Justine, that miserable epoch from which I dated all my woe. deeper yet plunged I as lightened sensibly was spirit my upon weight The in the ravine of Arve. The immense mountains and precipices that ,rocks the among raging river the of sound the ,side every on me overhung and the dashing of the waterfalls around spoke of a power mighty as less being any before bend to or fear to ceased I --Omnipotence almighty than that which had created and ruled the elements, ,higher ascended I as ,Still .guise terrific most their in displayed here the valley assumed a more magnificent and astonishing character. ,mountains piny of precipices the on hanging castles Ruined the impetuous Arve, and cottages every here and there peeping .beauty singular of scene a formed trees the among from forth But it was augmented and rendered sublime by the mighty Alps, ,all above towered domes and pyramids shining and white whose as belonging to another earth, the habitations of another race of beings.

I passed the bridge of Pelissier, where the ravine, which the river that mountain the ascend to began I and ,me before opened ,forms overhangs it. Soon after, I entered the valley of Chamounix. and beautiful so not but ,sublime and wonderful more is valley This picturesque as that of Servox, through which I had just passed. I but ,boundaries immediate its were mountains snowy and high The saw no more ruined castles and fertile fields. Immense glaciers falling the of thunder rumbling the heard I ;road the approached avalanche and marked the smoke of its passage. Mont Blanc, the surrounding the from itself raised ,Blanc Mont magnificent and supreme aiguilles, and its tremendous dome overlooked the valley.

A tingling long-lost sense of pleasure often came across me during suddenly object new some ,road the in turn Some .journey this perceived and recognized, reminded me of days gone by, and were winds very The .boyhood of gaiety lighthearted the with associated whispered in soothing accents, and maternal Nature bade me weep no more. fettered myself found --act to ceased influence kindly the again Then again to grief and indulging in all the misery of reflection.

Frankenstein

,world the forget to so striving ,animal my on spurred I Then
my fears, and more than all, myself--or, in a more desperate fashion,
.despair and horror by down weighed ,grass the on myself threw and alighted I

At length I arrived at the village of Chamounix. Exhaustion
I which mind of and body of both fatigue extreme the to succeeded
had endured. For a short space of time I remained at the window
and Blanc Mont above played that lightnings pallid the watching
listening to the rushing of the Arve, which pursued its noisy way
keen too my to lullaby a as acted sounds lulling same The .beneath
sensations; when I placed my head upon my pillow, sleep crept over
.oblivion of giver the blessed and came it as it felt I ;me

Chapter 10

I spent the following day roaming through the valley. I stood
 a in rise their take which ,Arveiron the of sources the beside
 glacier, that with slow pace is advancing down from the summit of
 vast of sides abrupt The .valley the barricade to hills the
 mountains were before me; the icy wall of the glacier overhung me;
 silence solemn the and ;around scattered were pines shattered few a
 of this glorious presence-chamber of imperial nature was broken
 the ,fragment vast some of fall the or waves brawling the by only
 thunder sound of the avalanche or the cracking, reverberated along
 silent the through ,which ,ice accumulated the of ,mountains the
 working of immutable laws, was ever and anon rent and torn, as if
 and sublime These .hands their in plaything a but been had it
 magnificent scenes afforded me the greatest consolation that I was
 of littleness all from me elevated They .receiving of capable
 feeling, and although they did not remove my grief, they subdued
 mind my diverted they ,also ,degree some In .it tranquillized and
 from the thoughts over which it had brooded for the last month.
 and on waited ,were it as ,slumbers my ;night at rest to retired I
 ministered to by the assemblance of grand shapes which I had
 the ;me round congregated They .day the during contemplated
 unstained snowy mountaintop, the glittering pinnacle, the pine woods,
 --clouds the amidst soaring ,eagle the ,ravine bare ragged and
 they all gathered round me and bade me be at peace.

Where had they fled when the next morning I awoke? All of soul-
 .thought every clouded melancholy dark and ,sleep with fled inspiriting
 The rain was pouring in torrents, and thick mists hid the summits of
 .friends mighty those of faces the not saw even I that so ,mountains the
 Still I would penetrate their misty veil and seek them in their
 was mule My ?me to storm and rain were What .retreats cloudy
 brought to the door, and I resolved to ascend to the summit of Montanvert.
 -ever and tremendous the of view the that effect the remembered I
 glacier had produced upon my mind when I first saw it. It had then
 and soul the to wings gave that ecstasy sublime a with me filled
 allowed it to soar from the obscure world to light and joy.
 always indeed had nature in majestic and awful the of sight The

Frankenstein

the effect of solemnizing my mind and causing me to forget
the life of cares passing the
for I was well acquainted with the path, and the presence of another
scene the of grandeur solitary the destroy would

The ascent is precipitous, but the path is cut into continual and
perpendicularity the surmount to you enable which windings short
of the mountain. It is a scene terrifically desolate. In a thousand
lie trees where perceived be may avalanche winter the of traces the spots
broken and strewed on the ground, some entirely destroyed, others bent, leaning
trees other upon transversely or mountain the of rocks jutting the upon
The path, as you ascend higher, is intersected by ravines of snow,
is them of one above from roll continually stones which down
particularly dangerous, as the slightest sound, such as even
sufficient air of concussion a produces voice loud a in speaking
to draw destruction upon the head of the speaker. The pines are
severity of air an add and sombre are they but luxuriant or tall not
to the scene. I looked on the valley beneath; vast mists were rising from
the around wreaths thick in curling and it through ran which rivers the
opposite mountains, whose summits were hid in the uniform clouds,
melancholy the to added and sky dark the from poured rain while
impression I received from the objects around me. Alas! Why does
brute the in apparent those to superior sensibilities of boast man
it only renders them more necessary beings. If our impulses were
free nearly be might we desire and thirst hunger to confined
but now we are moved by every wind that blows and a chance word
us to convey may word that that scene or

We rest; a dream has power to poison sleep.
The day pollutes thought 'twand one rise We
We feel, conceive, or reason; laugh or weep,
away cares our cast or woe fond Embrace
It is the same: for, be it joy or sorrow,
free is still departure its of path The
Man's yesterday may ne'er be like his morrow;
!mutability but endure may Nought

Frankenstein

It was nearly noon when I arrived at the top of the ascent. The ice of sea the overlooks that rock the upon sat I time some For A mist covered both that and the surrounding mountains. Presently the glacier the upon descended I and the cloud the dissipated breeze a The surface is very uneven, rising like the waves of a troubled sea, deep sink that rifts by interspersed and low descending The field of ice is almost a league in width, but I spent nearly bare a is mountain opposite The it crossing in hours two perpendicular rock. From the side where I now stood Montanvert was rose it above and a league of distance the at opposite exactly Mont Blanc, in awful majesty. I remained in a recess of the rock, rather or sea The scene stupendous and wonderful this on gazing the vast river of ice, wound among its dependent mountains, whose glittering and icy Their recesses its over hung summits aerial peaks shone in the sunlight over the clouds. My heart, which was exclaimed I joy like something with swelled now sorrowful before "Wandering spirits, if indeed ye wander, and do not rest in your your as me take or happiness faint this me allow beds narrow companion, away from the joys of life."

As I said this I suddenly beheld the figure of a man, at some bounded He speed superhuman with me towards advancing distance over the crevices in the ice, among which I had walked with caution; man of that exceed to seemed approached he as also stature his I was troubled; a mist came over my eyes, and I felt a faintness mountains the of gale cold the by restored quickly was I but me seize I perceived, as the shape came nearer (sight tremendous and abhorred!) horror and rage with trembled I created had I whom wretch the was it that resolving to wait his approach and then close with him in mortal combat. with combined anguish bitter bespoke countenance his approached He disdain and malignity, while its unearthly ugliness rendered it ;this observed scarcely I But eyes human for horrible too almost rage and hatred had at first deprived me of utterance, and I of expressive words with him overwhelm to only recovered furious detestation and contempt.

"Devil," I exclaimed, "do you dare approach me? And do not you ?head miserable your on wretched arm my of vengeance fierce the fear Begone, vile insect! Or rather, stay, that I may trample you to dust!"

Frankenstein

,existence miserable your of extinction the with ,could I That !oh ,And restore those victims whom you have so diabolically murdered!"

"I expected this reception," said the daemon. "All men hate the all beyond miserable am who ,hated be I must ,then ,how ;wretched living things! Yet you, my creator, detest and spurn me, thy the by dissoluble only ties by bound art thou whom to ,creature annihilation of one of us. You purpose to kill me. How dare you mine do will I and ,me towards duty your Do ?life with thus sport towards you and the rest of mankind. If you will comply with my ,refuse you if but ;peace at you and them leave will I ,conditions I will glut the maw of death, until it be satiated with the blood ".friends remaining your of

"Abhorred monster! Fiend that thou art! The tortures of hell are reproach You !devil Wretched .crimes thy for vengeance a mild too me with your creation, come on, then, that I may extinguish the ".bestowed negligently so I which spark

My rage was without bounds; I sprang on him, impelled by all the .another of existence the against being one arm can which feelings

He easily eluded me and said,

"Be calm! I entreat you to hear me before you give vent to your you that ,enough suffered not I Have .head devoted my on hatred seek to increase my misery? Life, although it may only be an .it defend will I and ,me to dear is ,anguish of accumulation Remember, thou hast made me more powerful than thyself; my height be not will I But .supple more joints my ,thine to superior is tempted to set myself in opposition to thee. I am thy creature, if king and lord natural my to docile and mild even be will I and thou wilt also perform thy part, the which thou owest me. Oh, upon trample and other every to equitable not be ,Frankenstein me alone, to whom thy justice, and even thy clemency and affection, ,Adam thy be to ought I ;creature thy am I that Remember .due most is but I am rather the fallen angel, whom thou drivest from joy for no misdeed. .excluded irrevocably am alone I which from ,bliss see I Everywhere I was benevolent and good; misery made me a fiend. Make me happy,

Frankenstein

".virtuous be again shall I and

"Begone! I will not hear you. There can be no community between in strength our try us let or ,Begone .enemies are we ;me and you a fight, in which one must fall."

"How can I move thee? Will no entreaties cause thee to turn a and goodness thy implores who ,creature thy upon eye favourable compassion? Believe me, Frankenstein, I was benevolent; my soul ?alone miserably ,alone not I am but ;humanity and love with glowed You, my creator, abhor me; what hope can I gather from your fellow desert The .me hate and spurn They ?nothing me owe who ,creatures mountains and dreary glaciers are my refuge. I have wandered here a are ,fear not do only I which ,ice of caves the ;days many dwelling to me, and the only one which man does not grudge. your than me to kinder are they for ,hail I skies bleak These fellow beings. If the multitude of mankind knew of my existence, .destruction my for themselves arm and ,do you as do would they Shall I not then hate them who abhor me? I will keep no terms with .wretchedness my share shall they and ,miserable am I .enemies my Yet it is in your power to recompense me, and deliver them from an only not that ,great so make to you for remains only it which evil you and your family, but thousands of others, shall be swallowed up ,moved be compassion your Let .rage its of whirlwinds the in and do not disdain me. Listen to my tale; when you have heard that, .deserve I that judge shall you as ,me commiserate or abandon But hear me. The guilty are allowed, by human laws, bloody as .condemned are they before defence own their in speak to ,are they Listen to me, Frankenstein. You accuse me of murder, and yet you would, the praise ,Oh .creature own your destroy ,conscience satisfied a with eternal justice of man! Yet I ask you not to spare me; listen to me, ".hands your of work the destroy ,will you if and ,can you if ,then and

"Why do you call to my remembrance," I rejoined, "circumstances of origin miserable the been have I that ,reflect to shudder I which and author? Cursed be the day, abhorred devil, in which you first that hands the be)myself curse I although(Cursed !light saw formed you! You have made me wretched beyond expression. You have .not or you to just am I whether consider to power no me left

Begone! Relieve me from the sight of your detested form."

"Thus I relieve thee, my creator," he said, and placed his hated
I thus" ;violence with me from flung I which ,eyes my before hands
take from thee a sight which you abhor. Still thou canst listen to
,possessed once I that virtues the By .compassion thy me grant and me
I demand this from you. Hear my tale; it is long and strange,
;sensations fine your to fitting not is place this of temperature the and
come to the hut upon the mountain. The sun is yet high in the heavens;
and precipices snowy your behind itself hide to descends it before
illuminate another world, you will have heard my story and can decide.
and man of neighbourhood the forever quit I whether ,rests it you On
lead a harmless life, or become the scourge of your fellow creatures
".ruin speedy own your of author the and

As he said this he led the way across the ice; I followed.
,proceeded I as but ,him answer not did I and ,full was heart My
I weighed the various arguments that he had used and determined at
,curiosity by urged partly was I .tale his to listen to least
and compassion confirmed my resolution. I had hitherto supposed him
confirmation a sought eagerly I and ,brother my of murderer the be to
or denial of this opinion. For the first time, also, I felt what
ought I that and ,were creature his towards creator a of duties the
to render him happy before I complained of his wickedness. These
,ice the crossed We .demand his with comply to me urged motives
therefore, and ascended the opposite rock. The air was cold, and
with fiend the ,hut the entered we ;descend to began again rain the
an air of exultation, I with a heavy heart and depressed spirits.
my which fire the by myself seating and ,listen to consented I But
odious companion had lighted, he thus began his tale.

Chapter 11

"It is with considerable difficulty that I remember the original and confused appear period that of events the all ;being my of era indistinct. A strange multiplicity of sensations seized me, and I ,indeed ,was it and ;time same the at smelt and ,heard ,felt ,saw a long time before I learned to distinguish between the operations light stronger a ,remember I ,degrees By .senses various my of pressed upon my nerves, so that I was obliged to shut my eyes. felt I had hardly but ,me troubled and me over came then Darkness this when, by opening my eyes, as I now suppose, the light poured I but ,descended ,believe I ,and walked I .again me upon in presently found a great alteration in my sensations. Before, touch my to impervious ,me surrounded had bodies opaque and dark or sight; but I now found that I could wander on at liberty, .avoid or surmount either not could I which obstacles no with The light became more and more oppressive to me, and the heat .shade receive could I where place a sought I ,walked I as me wearying This was the forest near Ingolstadt; and here I lay by the side by tormented felt I until ,fatigue my from resting brook a of hunger and thirst. This roused me from my nearly dormant state, or trees the on hanging found I which berries some ate I and lying on the ground. I slaked my thirst at the brook, and then .sleep by overcome was ,down lying

"It was dark when I awoke; I felt cold also, and half frightened, I Before .desolate so myself finding ,instinctively ,were it as had quitted your apartment, on a sensation of cold, I had covered me secure to insufficient were these but ,clothes some with myself from the dews of night. I was a poor, helpless, miserable wretch; me invade pain feeling but ;nothing ,distinguish could and ,knew I on all sides, I sat down and wept.

"Soon a gentle light stole over the heavens and gave me a sensation among from rise form radiant a beheld and up started I .pleasure of the trees. [The moon] I gazed with a kind of wonder. It moved slowly, .berries of search in out went again I and ,path my enlightened it but I was still cold when under one of the trees I found a huge cloak,

Frankenstein

ground the upon down sat and ,myself covered I which with
No distinct ideas occupied my mind; all was confused. I felt light,
,ears my in rang sounds innumerable ;darkness and ,thirst and ,hunger and
and on all sides various scents saluted me; the only object that I could
.pleasure with that on eyes my fixed I and ,moon bright the was distinguish

"Several changes of day and night passed, and the orb of night had
from sensations my distinguish to began I when ,lessened greatly
each other. I gradually saw plainly the clear stream that supplied
.foliage their with me shaded that trees the and drink with me
I was delighted when I first discovered that a pleasant sound,
little the of throats the from proceeded ,ears my saluted often which
winged animals who had often intercepted the light from my eyes.
that forms the ,accuracy greater with ,observe to also began I
surrounded me and to perceive the boundaries of the radiant roof of
pleasant the imitate to tried I Sometimes .me canopied which light
songs of the birds but was unable. Sometimes I wished to express
inarticulate and uncouth the but ,mode own my in sensations my
sounds which broke from me frightened me into silence again.

"The moon had disappeared from the night, and again, with a
.forest the in remained still I while ,itself showed ,form lessened
My sensations had by this time become distinct, and my mind received
light the to accustomed became eyes My .ideas additional day every
and to perceive objects in their right forms; I distinguished
.another from herb one ,degrees by and ,herb the from insect the
I found that the sparrow uttered none but harsh notes, whilst those
.enticing and sweet were thrush and blackbird the of

"One day, when I was oppressed by cold, I found a fire which had been
at delight with overcome was and ,beggars wandering some by left
the warmth I experienced from it. In my joy I thrust my hand into
.pain of cry a with again out it drew quickly but ,embers live the
How strange, I thought, that the same cause should produce such
to and ,fire the of materials the examined I !effects opposite
my joy found it to be composed of wood. I quickly collected
was I .burn not would and wet were they but ,branches some
pained at this and sat still watching the operation of the fire.
itself and dried heat the near placed had I which wood wet The

Frankenstein

became inflamed. I reflected on this, and by touching the
in myself busied and cause the discovered I ,branches various
collecting a great quantity of wood, that I might dry it and have
sleep brought and on came night When .fire of supply plentiful a
with it, I was in the greatest fear lest my fire should be
and leaves and wood dry with carefully it covered I .extinguished
placed wet branches upon it; and then, spreading my cloak, I lay on
.sleep into sank and ground the

"It was morning when I awoke, and my first care was to visit the fire.
.flame a into it fanned quickly breeze gentle a and ,it uncovered I
I observed this also and contrived a fan of branches, which roused
came night When .extinguished nearly were they when embers the
again I found, with pleasure, that the fire gave light as well
me to useful was element this of discovery the that and heat as
in my food, for I found some of the offals that the travellers
than savoury more much tasted and ,roasted been had left had
the berries I gathered from the trees. I tried, therefore,
.embers live the on it placing ,manner same the in food my dress to
I found that the berries were spoiled by this operation, and the
.improved much roots and nuts

"Food, however, became scarce, and I often spent the whole day searching
,this found I When .hunger of pangs the assuage to acorns few a for vain in
I resolved to quit the place that I had hitherto inhabited, to seek for
.satisfied easily more be would experienced I wants few the where one
In this emigration I exceedingly lamented the loss of the fire which I
.it reproduce to how not knew and accident through obtained had
I gave several hours to the serious consideration of this difficulty,
wrapping and ,it supply to attempt all relinquish to obliged was I but
myself up in my cloak, I struck across the wood towards the setting sun.
the discovered length at and rambles these in days three passed I
open country. A great fall of snow had taken place the night before,
,disconsolate was appearance the ;white uniform one of were fields the and
and I found my feet chilled by the cold damp substance that covered the ground.

"It was about seven in the morning, and I longed to obtain food and shelter;
doubtless had which ,ground rising a on ,hut small a perceived I length at
been built for the convenience of some shepherd. This was a new sight to me,

Frankenstein

,open door the Finding .curiosity great with structure the examined I and I entered. An old man sat in it, near a fire, over which he was preparing ,me perceiving and ,noise a hearing on turned He .breakfast his shrieked loudly, and quitting the hut, ran across the fields with .capable appeared hardly form debilitated his which of speed a His appearance, different from any I had ever before seen, the by enchanted was I But .me surprised somewhat flight his and appearance of the hut; here the snow and rain could not penetrate; and exquisite as then me to presented it and ;dry was ground the divine a retreat as Pandemonium appeared to the demons of hell devoured greedily I .fire of lake the in sufferings their after the remnants of the shepherd's breakfast, which consisted of bread, ,Then .like not did I ,however ,latter the ;wine and ,milk ,cheese overcome by fatigue, I lay down among some straw and fell asleep.

"It was noon when I awoke, and allured by the warmth of the sun, to determined I ,ground white the on brightly shone which recommence my travels; and, depositing the remains of the the across proceeded I ,found I wallet a in breakfast 'peasant fields for several hours, until at sunset I arrived at a village. and ,cottages neater the ,huts The !appear this did miraculous How stately houses engaged my admiration by turns. The vegetables in windows the at placed saw I that cheese and milk the ,gardens the of some of the cottages, allured my appetite. One of the best of door the within foot my placed hardly had I but ,entered I these before the children shrieked, and one of the women fainted. ,until ,me attacked some ,fled some ;roused was village whole The grievously bruised by stones and many other kinds of missile weapons, ,hovel low a in refuge took fearfully and country open the to escaped I quite bare, and making a wretched appearance after the palaces I had neat a of cottage a joined ,however hovel This .village the in beheld and pleasant appearance, but after my late dearly bought experience, ,wood of constructed was refuge of place My .it enter not dared I but so low that I could with difficulty sit upright in it. No wood, ;dry was it but ,floor the formed which ,earth the on placed was ,however and although the wind entered it by innumerable chinks, I found it an .rain and snow the from asylum agreeable

Frankenstein

"Here, then, I retreated and lay down happy to have found a shelter, more still and, season the of inclemency the from, miserable however from the barbarity of man. As soon as morning dawned I crept from my kennel, the in remain could I if discover and cottage adjacent the view might I that habitation I had found. It was situated against the back of the cottage a and sty pig a by exposed were which sides the on surrounded and clear pool of water. One part was open, and by that I had crept in; with perceived be might I which by crevice every covered I now but stones and wood, yet in such a manner that I might move them, sty the through came enjoyed I light the all; out pass to occasion on and that was sufficient for me.

"Having thus arranged my dwelling and carpeted it with clean straw, I and, distance a at man a of figure the saw I for, retired I remembered too well my treatment the night before to trust myself for sustenance my for provided, however, first had I, power his in that day by a loaf of coarse bread, which I purloined, and a cup the of hand my from than conveniently more drink could I which with pure water which flowed by my retreat. The floor was a little raised, chimney the to vicinity its by and, dry perfectly kept was it that so of the cottage it was tolerably warm.

"Being thus provided, I resolved to reside in this hovel until .determination my alter might which occur should something It was indeed a paradise compared to the bleak forest, my former my ate I, earth dank and, branches -rain the, residence breakfast with pleasure and was about to remove a plank to looking and, step a heard I when water little a myself procure through a small chink, I beheld a young creature, with a pail on of and young was girl The, hovel my before passing, head her gentle demeanour, unlike what I have since found cottagers and coarse a, dressed meanly was she Yet, be to servants farmhouse blue petticoat and a linen jacket being her only garb; her fair, sad yet patient looked she: adorned not but plaited was hair I lost sight of her, and in about a quarter of an hour she returned she As, milk with filled partly now was which, pail the bearing walked along, seemingly incommoded by the burden, a young man met her, few a Uttering, despondence deeper a expressed countenance whose sounds with an air of melancholy, he took the pail from her head and

.disappeared they and ,followed She .himself cottage the to it bore Presently I saw the young man again, with some tools in his hand, ,busied also was girl the and ;cottage the behind field the cross sometimes in the house and sometimes in the yard. "On examining had cottage the of windows the of one that found I ,dwelling my formerly occupied a part of it, but the panes had been filled almost and small a was these of one In .wood with up imperceptible chink through which the eye could just penetrate. and whitewashed ,visible was room small a crevice this Through clean but very bare of furniture. In one corner, near a small a in hands his on head his leaning ,man old an sat ,fire disconsolate attitude. The young girl was occupied in arranging ,drawer a of out something took she presently but ;cottage the which employed her hands, and she sat down beside the old man, sounds produce to and play to began ,instrument an up taking ,who sweeter than the voice of the thrush or the nightingale. It was a aught beheld never had who wretch poor ,me to even ,sight lovely beautiful before. The silver hair and benevolent countenance of of manners gentle the while ,reverence my won cottager aged the the girl enticed my love. He played a sweet mournful air which ,companion amiable his of eyes the from tears drew perceived I of which the old man took no notice, until she sobbed audibly; he then ,work her leaving ,creature fair the and ,sounds few a pronounced knelt at his feet. He raised her and smiled with such kindness and ;nature overpowering and peculiar a of sensations felt I that affection they were a mixture of pain and pleasure, such as I had never before withdrew I and ;food or warmth ,cold or hunger from either ,experienced from the window, unable to bear these emotions.

"Soon after this the young man returned, bearing on his shoulders relieve to helped ,door the at him met girl The .wood of load a him of his burden, and taking some of the fuel into the cottage, nook a into apart went youth the and she then ;fire the on it placed of the cottage, and he showed her a large loaf and a piece of cheese. ,plants and roots some for garden the into went and pleased seemed She which she placed in water, and then upon the fire. She afterwards garden the into went man young the whilst ,work her continued and appeared busily employed in digging and pulling up roots. woman young the ,hour an about thus employed been had he After

joined him and they entered the cottage together.

"The old man had, in the meantime, been pensive, but on the
air cheerful more assumed he companions his of appearance
and they sat down to eat. The meal was quickly dispatched.
cottage the arranging in occupied again was woman young The
the old man walked before the cottage in the sun for a few minutes,
beauty in exceed could Nothing youth the of arm the on leaning
the contrast between these two excellent creatures. One was old,
love and benevolence with beaming countenance a and hairs silver with
the younger was slight and graceful in his figure, and his features
attitude and eyes his yet symmetry finest the with moulded were
expressed the utmost sadness and despondency. The old man returned
he those from different tools with youth the and cottage the to
had used in the morning, directed his steps across the fields.

"Night quickly shut in, but to my extreme wonder, I found that
tapers of use the by light prolonging of means a had cottagers the
and was delighted to find that the setting of the sun did not put an
neighbours human my watching in experienced I pleasure the to end
In the evening the young girl and her companion were employed in
man old the and understand not did I which occupations various
again took up the instrument which produced the divine sounds that
the finished had he as soon So morning the in me enchanted had
youth began, not to play, but to utter sounds that were monotonous,
nor instrument 'man old the of harmony the resembling neither and
the songs of the birds; I since found that he read aloud, but at
letters or words of science the of nothing knew I time that

"The family, after having been thus occupied for a short time,
rest to conjectured I as retired and lights their extinguished

Chapter 12

"I lay on my straw, but I could not sleep. I thought of the gentle the was me struck chiefly What .day the of occurrences manners of these people, and I longed to join them, but dared not. before night the suffered had I treatment the well too remembered I from the barbarous villagers, and resolved, whatever course of for that ,pursue to right it think hereafter might I conduct the present I would remain quietly in my hovel, watching and .actions their influenced which motives the discover to endeavouring

"The cottagers arose the next morning before the sun. The young youth the and ,food the prepared and cottage the arranged woman departed after the first meal.

"This day was passed in the same routine as that which preceded it. in girl the and ,doors of out employed constantly was man young The various laborious occupations within. The old man, whom I soon instrument his on hours leisure his employed ,blind be to perceived or in contemplation. Nothing could exceed the love and respect which .companion venerable their towards exhibited cottagers younger the They performed towards him every little office of affection and .smiles benevolent his by them rewarded he and ,gentleness with duty

"They were not entirely happy. The young man and his companion their for cause no saw I .weep to appeared and apart went often unhappiness, but I was deeply affected by it. If such lovely imperfect an ,I that strange less was it ,miserable were creatures and solitary being, should be wretched. Yet why were these house delightful a possessed They ?unhappy beings gentle (for such it was in my eyes) and every luxury; they had a fire to were they ;hungry when viands delicious and chill when them warm dressed in excellent clothes; and, still more, they enjoyed one of looks day each interchanging ,speech and company 'another affection and kindness. What did their tears imply? Did they these solve to unable first at was I ?pain express really questions, but perpetual attention and time explained to me many .enigmatic first at were which appearances

"A considerable period elapsed before I discovered one of the causes of their poverty was the want of vegetables and the milk of one cow, which gave very little during the winter. Their garden and the milk of one cow, which gave very little during the winter, they .it support to food procure scarcely could masters its when often, I believe, suffered the pangs of hunger very poignantly, placed they times several for ,cottagers younger two the especially food before the old man when they reserved none for themselves.

"This trait of kindness moved me sensibly. I had been accustomed, but when I found that in doing this I inflicted pain on the cottagers, which roots and ,nuts ,berries with myself satisfied and abstained I I gathered from a neighbouring wood.

"I discovered also another means through which I was enabled to of part great a spent youth the that found I .labours their assist each day in collecting wood for the family fire, and during the ,discovered quickly I which of use the ,tools his took often I night and brought home firing sufficient for the consumption of several days.

"I remember, the first time that I did this, the young woman, greatly appeared ,morning the in door the opened she when astonished on seeing a great pile of wood on the outside. ,her joined youth the and ,voice loud a in words some uttered She who also expressed surprise. I observed, with pleasure, that he the repairing in it spent but ,day that forest the to go not did cottage and cultivating the garden.

"By degrees I made a discovery of still greater moment. I found their communicating of method a possessed people these that experience and feelings to one another by articulate sounds. or pleasure produced sometimes spoke they words the that perceived I pain, smiles or sadness, in the minds and countenances of the hearers. become to desired ardently I and ,science godlike a indeed was This acquainted with it. But I was baffled in every attempt I made for ,uttered they words the and ,quick was pronunciation Their .purpose this

not having any apparent connection with visible objects, I was unable to unravel the mystery which by great application, however, and after having remained during the space of several months in the most familiar objects of discourse; I learned and also learned the names of the cottagers themselves. The youth and his companion had each a father which one only had but several names of them. The girl was called 'sister' or 'Agatha,' and the youth 'Felix,' 'brother,' 'son' or 'brother.' I felt I could not describe the delight I felt when I appropriated to each of these sounds and was able to pronounce them. I understood to yet as being without words other several distinguished I or apply them, such as 'good,' 'dearest,' 'unhappy.'

"I spent the winter in this manner. The gentle manners and beauty of the cottagers, when I was unhappy, endeared them to me greatly. I felt depressed; when they rejoiced, I sympathized in their joys. I never saw any other beings besides human beings enter the cottage, their harsh manners and rude gait only enhanced my melancholy. The old man, whose accomplishments were superior to those I could perceive, often endeavoured to encourage his children, but they cast off his counsels. He sometimes called me, and I found that he sometimes as he would talk in a cheerful accent, with an expression of goodness and respect which I never saw in any other. Agatha bestowed upon me even pleasure that her eyes sometimes filled with tears, which she endeavoured to wipe away, but she could not prevent her countenance from generally appearing more cheerful after having listened to the exhortations of her father. He was always the saddest of the group. Felix, who was not thus, and even to my unpractised senses, he appeared to have suffered more sorrowful than his friends. But his countenance was more cheerful than that of his sister, especially when he addressed her.

"I could mention innumerable instances which, although slight, were marked in the dispositions of the cottagers. In the midst of poverty and want, Felix carried with pleasure to his sister the little white flower which first peeped from beneath the snowy ground. Early in the morning, before she had risen, he cleared away the snow which obstructed the path to her door, and drew water from the well that she might have milk for her cows.

and brought the wood from the outhouse, where, to his perpetual astonishment,
day the In .hand invisible an by replenished always store his found he
I believe, he worked sometimes for a neighbouring farmer, because he often
.him with wood no brought yet ,dinner until return not did and forth went
At other times he worked in the garden, but as there was little to do
.Agatha and man old the to read he ,season frosty the in

"This reading had puzzled me extremely at first, but by degrees I
as read he when sounds same the of many uttered he that discovered
when he talked. I conjectured, therefore, that he found on the
ardently I and ,understood he which speech for signs paper
longed to comprehend these also; but how was that possible when I
?signs as stood they which for sounds the understand even not did
I improved, however, sensibly in this science, but not
I although ,conversation of kind any up follow to sufficiently
applied my whole mind to the endeavour, for I easily perceived that,
,cottagers the to myself discover to longed eagerly I although
I ought not to make the attempt until I had first become master
them make to me enable might knowledge which ,language their of
overlook the deformity of my figure, for with this also the
.acquainted me made had eyes my to presented perpetually contrast

"I had admired the perfect forms of my cottagers--their grace,
I when terrified I was how but ;complexions delicate and ,beauty
viewed myself in a transparent pool! At first I started back,
the in reflected was who I indeed was it that believe to unable
mirror; and when I became fully convinced that I was in reality the
of sensations bitterest the with filled was I ,am I that monster
despondence and mortification. Alas! I did not yet entirely know
.deformity miserable this of effects fatal the

"As the sun became warmer and the light of day longer, the
.earth black the and trees bare the beheld I and ,vanished snow
From this time Felix was more employed, and the heart-moving
I as ,food Their .disappeared famine impending of indications
afterwards found, was coarse, but it was wholesome; and they
sprang plants of kinds new Several .it of sufficiency a procured
up in the garden, which they dressed; and these signs of comfort
.advanced season the as daily increased

Frankenstein

"The old man, leaning on his son, walked each day at noon, when it poured heavens the when called was it found I as ,rain not did forth its waters. This frequently took place, but a high wind pleasant more far became season the and ,earth the dried quickly than it had been.

"My mode of life in my hovel was uniform. During the morning were they when and ,cottagers the of motions the attended I dispersed in various occupations, I slept; the remainder of the day ,rest to retired had they When .friends my observing in spent was if there was any moon or the night was star-light, I went into .cottage the for fuel and food own my collected and woods the When I returned, as often as it was necessary, I cleared their path .Felix by done seen had I that offices those performed and snow the from I afterwards found that these labours, performed by an invisible hand, ,occasions these on ,them heard I twice or once and ;them astonished greatly utter the words `good spirit,' `wonderful'; but I did not then understand .terms these of signification the

"My thoughts now became more active, and I longed to discover the inquisitive was I ;creatures lovely these of feelings and motives to know why Felix appeared so miserable and Agatha so sad. restore to power my in be might it that)!wretch foolish(thought I happiness to these deserving people. When I slept or was absent, the and ,Agatha gentle the ,father blind venerable the of forms the excellent Felix flitted before me. I looked upon them as superior in formed I .destiny future my of arbiters the be would who beings my imagination a thousand pictures of presenting myself to them, ,disgusted be would they that imagined I .me of reception their and until, by my gentle demeanour and onciliating words, I should first .love their afterwards and favour their win

"These thoughts exhilarated me and led me to apply with fresh ardour ,harsh indeed were organs My .language of art the acquiring the to but supple; and although my voice was very unlike the soft music of their .ease tolerable with understood I as words such pronounced I yet ,tones It was as the ass and the lap-dog; yet surely the gentle ass whose ,rude were manners his although ,affectionate were intentions

Frankenstein

deserved better treatment than blows and execration.

"The pleasant showers and genial warmth of spring greatly altered
have to seemed change this before who Men .earth the of aspect the
been hid in caves dispersed themselves and were employed in various
and ,notes cheerful more in sang birds The .cultivation of arts
the leaves began to bud forth on the trees. Happy, happy earth!
,bleak was ,before time a short so ,which ,gods for habitation Fit
damp, and unwholesome. My spirits were elevated by the enchanting
present the ,memory my from blotted was past the ;nature of appearance
was tranquil, and the future gilded by bright rays of hope and
".joy of anticipations

Chapter 13

"I now hasten to the more moving part of my story. I shall relate
what from which feelings with me impressed that events
have made me what I am.

"Spring advanced rapidly; the weather became fine and the skies cloudless.
The bloom now should gloomy and desert was before what that me surprised It
with the most beautiful flowers and verdure. My senses were gratified and
the beauty of sights thousand a and delight of scents thousand a by refreshed

"It was on one of these days, when my cottagers periodically rested
children the and guitar his on played man old --labour from
listened to him--that I observed the countenance of Felix was
his once and frequently sighed he ;expression beyond melancholy
father paused in his music, and I conjectured by his manner that he
a in replied Felix .sorrow 'son his of cause the inquired
cheerful accent, and the old man was recommencing his music when
the door at tapped someone

"It was a lady on horseback, accompanied by a country-man as a guide.
The lady was dressed in a dark suit and covered with a thick black veil.
Agatha asked a question, to which the stranger only replied by pronouncing,
Her voice was musical but unlike that of either of my friends. On hearing this word, Felix came up hastily
and beheld I and veil her up threw ,him saw she when ,who ,lady the to
countenance of angelic beauty and expression. Her hair of a shining
gentle but dark were eyes her ;braided curiously and ,black raven
although animated; her features of a regular proportion, and her
pink lovely a with tinged cheek each ,fair wondrously complexion

"Felix seemed ravished with delight when he saw her, every trait of
degree a expressed instantly it and ,face his from vanished sorrow
of ecstatic joy, of which I could hardly have believed it capable;
that at and ;pleasure with flushed cheek his as ,sparkled eyes his
moment I thought him as beautiful as the stranger. She appeared
lovely her from tears few a wiping ;feelings different by affected
eyes, she held out her hand to Felix, who kissed it rapturously

Frankenstein

.Arabian sweet his ,distinguish could I as well as ,her called and
She did not appear to understand him, but smiled. He assisted her
.cottage the into her conducted ,guide her dismissing and ,dismount to
Some conversation took place between him and his father, and the
kissed have would and feet 'man old the at knelt stranger young
his hand, but he raised her and embraced her affectionately.

"I soon perceived that although the stranger uttered articulate
was she ,own her of language a have to appeared and sounds
neither understood by nor herself understood the cottagers.
that saw I but ,comprehend not did I which signs many made They
her presence diffused gladness through the cottage, dispelling their
seemed Felix .mists morning the dissipates sun the as sorrow
peculiarly happy and with smiles of delight welcomed his Arabian.
,stranger lovely the of hands the kissed ,Agatha -ever the ,Agatha
and pointing to her brother, made signs which appeared to me to mean
,thus passed hours Some .came she until sorrowful been had he that
while they, by their countenances, expressed joy, the cause of
frequent the by ,found I Presently .comprehend not did I which
recurrence of some sound which the stranger repeated after them,
idea the and ;language their learn to endeavouring was she that
instantly occurred to me that I should make use of the same
twenty about learned stranger The .end same the to instructions
words at the first lesson; most of them, indeed, were those which
.others the by profited I but ,understood before had I

"As night came on, Agatha and the Arabian retired early. When they
Good` ,said and stranger the of hand the kissed Felix separated
night sweet Safie.' He sat up much longer, conversing with his
conjectured I name her of repetition frequent the by and ,father
that their lovely guest was the subject of their conversation.
faculty every bent and ,them understand to desired ardently I
towards that purpose, but found it utterly impossible.

"The next morning Felix went out to his work, and after the usual
feet the at sat Arabian the ,finished were Agatha of occupations
of the old man, and taking his guitar, played some airs so
and sorrow of tears drew once at they that beautiful entrancingly
delight from my eyes. She sang, and her voice flowed in a rich

.woods the of nightingale a like away dying or swelling ,cadence

"When she had finished, she gave the guitar to Agatha, who at first it accompanied voice her and ,air simple a played She .it declined in sweet accents, but unlike the wondrous strain of the stranger. Agatha which words some said and enraptured appeared man old The endeavoured to explain to Safie, and by which he appeared to wish .music her by delight greatest the him on bestowed she that express to

"The days now passed as peaceably as before, with the sole alteration .friends my of countenances the in sadness of place taken had joy that Safie was always gay and happy; she and I improved rapidly in the comprehend to began I months two in that so ,language of knowledge most of the words uttered by my protectors.

"In the meanwhile also the black ground was covered with herbage, the to sweet ,flowers innumerable with interspersed banks green the and scent and the eyes, stars of pale radiance among the moonlight woods; nocturnal my and ;balmy and clear nights the ,warmer became sun the rambles were an extreme pleasure to me, although they were considerably never I for ,sun the of rising early and setting late the by shortened ventured abroad during daylight, fearful of meeting with the same .entered I which village first the in endured formerly had I treatment

"My days were spent in close attention, that I might more speedily rapidly more improved I that boast may I and ;language the master than the Arabian, who understood very little and conversed in almost imitate could and comprehended I whilst ,accents broken every word that was spoken.

"While I improved in speech, I also learned the science of letters wide a me before opened this and ,stranger the to taught was it as field for wonder and delight.

"The book from which Felix instructed Safie was Volney's Ruins of had book this of purport the understood have not should I .Empires not Felix, in reading it, given very minute explanations. He had framed was style declamatory the because ,said he ,work this chosen in imitation of the Eastern authors. Through this work I obtained

empires several the of view a and history of knowledge cursory a
at present existing in the world; it gave me an insight into the
of nations different the of religions and ,governments ,manners
the earth. I heard of the slothful Asiatics, of the stupendous genius
virtue wonderful and wars the of ,Grecians the of activity mental and
of the early Romans--of their subsequent degenerating--of the decline
.kings and ,Christianity ,chivalry of ,empire mighty that of
I heard of the discovery of the American hemisphere and wept
.inhabitants original its of fate hapless the over Safie with

"These wonderful narrations inspired me with strange feelings.
,magnificent and virtuous so ,powerful so once at ,indeed ,man Was
yet so vicious and base? He appeared at one time a mere scion of the
noble of conceived be can that all as another at and principle evil
and godlike. To be a great and virtuous man appeared the highest
,vicious and base be to ;being sensitive a befall can that honour
as many on record have been, appeared the lowest degradation, a
.worm harmless or mole blind the of that than abject more condition
For a long time I could not conceive how one man could go forth to
;governments and laws were there why even or ,fellow his murder
but when I heard details of vice and bloodshed, my wonder ceased
.loathing and disgust with away turned I and

"Every conversation of the cottagers now opened new wonders to me.
the upon bestowed Felix which instructions the to listened I While
Arabian, the strange system of human society was explained to me.
squalid and wealth immense of ,property of division the of heard I
poverty, of rank, descent, and noble blood.

"The words induced me to turn towards myself. I learned that the
and high were creatures fellow your by esteemed most possessions
unsullied descent united with riches. A man might be respected
was he either without but ,advantages these of one only with
considered, except in very rare instances, as a vagabond and a slave,
!few chosen the of profits the for powers his waste to doomed
And what was I? Of my creation and creator I was absolutely ignorant,
.property of kind no ,friends no ,money no possessed I that knew I but
I was, besides, endued with a figure hideously deformed and loathsome;
they than agile more was I .man as nature same the of even not was I

Frankenstein

and could subsist upon coarser diet; I bore the extremes of heat and
.theirs exceeded far stature my ;frame my to injury less with cold
When I looked around I saw and heard of none like me. Was I, then,
whom and fled men all which from ,earth the upon blot a ,monster a
all men disowned?

"I cannot describe to you the agony that these reflections
only sorrow but ,them dispel to tried I ;me upon inflicted
increased with knowledge. Oh, that I had forever remained in
,hunger of sensations the beyond felt nor known nor ,wood native my
thirst, and heat!

"Of what a strange nature is knowledge! It clings to the mind when
wished I .rock the on lichen a like it on seized once has it
sometimes to shake off all thought and feeling, but I learned that
and ,pain of sensation the overcome to means one but was there
that was death--a state which I feared yet did not understand.
and manners gentle the loved and feelings good and virtue admired I
amiable qualities of my cottagers, but I was shut out from intercourse
was I when ,stealth by obtained I which means through except ,them with
unseen and unknown, and which rather increased than satisfied the desire
Agatha of words gentle The .fellows my among one becoming of had I
and the animated smiles of the charming Arabian were not for me.
of conversation lively the and man old the of exhortations mild The
the loved Felix were not for me. Miserable, unhappy wretch!

"Other lessons were impressed upon me even more deeply. I heard
,children of growth and birth the and ,sexes of difference the of
how the father doted on the smiles of the infant, and the lively
the of cares and life the all how ,child older the of sallies
mother were wrapped up in the precious charge, how the mind of
all and ,sister ,brother of ,knowledge gained and expanded youth
the various relationships which bind one human being to another
.bonds mutual in

"But where were my friends and relations? No father had watched my
;caresses and smiles with me blessed had mother no ,days infant
or if they had, all my past life was now a blot, a blind vacancy
remembrance earliest my From .nothing distinguished I which in

Frankenstein

I had been as I then was in height and proportion. I had never yet
.me with intercourse any claimed who or me resembling being a seen
What was I? The question again recurred, to be answered only with groans.

"I will soon explain to what these feelings tended, but allow
such me in excited story whose ,cottagers the to return to now me
various feelings of indignation, delight, and wonder, but which all
protectors my for reverence and love additional in terminated
(for so I loved, in an innocent, half-painful self-deceit, to call them)."

not help owing to his own mind that the captive possessed a treasure which
.hazard and toil his reward fully would

"The Turk quickly perceived the impression that his daughter had
more him secure to endeavoured and Felix of heart the on made
entirely in his interests by the promise of her hand in marriage so
too was Felix .safety of place a to conveyed be should he as soon
delicate to accept this offer, yet he looked forward to the
.happiness his of consummation the to as event the of probability

"During the ensuing days, while the preparations were going forward
by warmed was Felix of zeal the ,merchant the of escape the for
several letters that he received from this lovely girl, who found
the by lover her of language the in thoughts her express to means
aid of an old man, a servant of her father who understood French.
services intended his for terms ardent most the in him thanked She
towards her parent, and at the same time she gently deplored her own fate.

"I have copies of these letters, for I found means, during my
;writing of implements the procure to ,hovel the in residence
and the letters were often in the hands of Felix or Agatha.
truth the prove will they ;you to them give will I depart I Before
of my tale; but at present, as the sun is already far declined,
.you to them of substance the repeat to time have only shall I

"Safie related that her mother was a Christian Arab, seized and
won had she ,beauty her by recommended ;Turks the by slave a made
the heart of the father of Safie, who married her. The young girl
born ,who ,mother her of terms enthusiastic and high in spoke
in freedom, spurned the bondage to which she was now reduced.
and religion her of tenets the in daughter her instructed She
taught her to aspire to higher powers of intellect and an
.Muhammad of followers female the to forbidden spirit of independence
This lady died, but her lessons were indelibly impressed on the mind
and Asia to returning again of prospect the at sickened who ,Safie of
being immured within the walls of a harem, allowed only to occupy
,soul her of temper the to -ill ,amusements infantile with herself
now accustomed to grand ideas and a noble emulation for virtue.
where country a in remaining and Christian a marrying of prospect The

women were allowed to take a rank in society was enchanting to her.

"The day for the execution of the Turk was fixed, but on the night distant was morning before and prison he quitted he it to previous many leagues from Paris. Felix had procured passports in the name communicated previously had He himself and ,sister ,father his of his plan to the former, who aided the deceit by quitting his house, ,daughter his with ,himself concealed and journey a of pretence the under in an obscure part of Paris.

"Felix conducted the fugitives through France to Lyons and across a wait to decided had merchant the where ,Leghorn to Cenis Mont favourable opportunity of passing into some part of the Turkish dominions.

"Safie resolved to remain with her father until the moment of his departure, united be should she that promise his renewed Turk the time which before to his deliverer; and Felix remained with them in expectation of that event; exhibited who ,Arabian the of society the enjoyed he meantime the in and towards him the simplest and tenderest affection. They conversed with the with sometimes and ,interpreter an of means the through another one interpretation of looks; and Safie sang to him the divine airs of .country native her

"The Turk allowed this intimacy to take place and encouraged the hopes .plans other far formed had he heart his in while ,lovers youthful the of He loathed the idea that his daughter should be united to a Christian, ,lukewarm appear should he if Felix of resentment the feared he but for he knew that he was still in the power of his deliverer if he .inhabited they which state Italian the to him betray to choose should He revolved a thousand plans by which he should be enabled to prolong take to secretly and ,necessary longer no be might it until deceit the his daughter with him when he departed. His plans were facilitated .Paris from arrived which news the by

"The government of France were greatly enraged at the escape of .deliverer his punish and detect to pains no spared and victim their The plot of Felix was quickly discovered, and De Lacey and Agatha him roused and Felix reached news The .prison into thrown were from his dream of pleasure. His blind and aged father and his

air free the enjoyed he while dungeon noisome a in lay sister gentle and the society of her whom he loved. This idea was torture to him. a find should latter the if that Turk the with arranged quickly He favourable opportunity for escape before Felix could return to Italy, ,then and ;Leghorn at convent a at boarder a as remain should Safie quitting the lovely Arabian, he hastened to Paris and delivered and Lacey De free to hoping ,law the of vengeance the to up himself Agatha by this proceeding. "He did not succeed. They remained confined deprived which of result the ,place took trial the before months five for them of their fortune and condemned them to a perpetual exile from their .country native

"They found a miserable asylum in the cottage in Germany, where I ,Turk treacherous the that learned soon Felix .them discovered for whom he and his family endured such unheard-of oppression, ,ruin and poverty to reduced thus was deliverer his that discovering on became a traitor to good feeling and honour and had quitted Italy money of pittance a Felix sending insultingly ,daughter his with to aid him, as he said, in some plan of future maintenance.

"Such were the events that preyed on the heart of Felix and rendered him, have could He .family his of miserable most the ,him saw first I when endured poverty, and while this distress had been the meed of his virtue, of loss the and Turk the of ingratitude the but ;it in gloried he his beloved Safie were misfortunes more bitter and irreparable. .soul his into life new infused now Arabian the of arrival The

"When the news reached Leghorn that Felix was deprived of his no think to daughter his commanded merchant the ,rank and wealth more of her lover, but to prepare to return to her native country. ;command this by outraged was Safie of nature generous The she attempted to expostulate with her father, but he left her angrily, .mandate tyrannical his reiterating

"A few days after, the Turk entered his daughter's apartment and residence his that believe to reason had he that hastily her told at Leghorn had been divulged and that he should speedily be delivered to vessel a hired consequently had he ;government French the to up convey him to Constantinople, for which city he should sail in a few hours.

Frankenstein

,servant confidential a of care the under daughter his leave to intended He
to follow at her leisure with the greater part of his property,
.Leghorn at arrived yet not had which

"When alone, Safie resolved in her own mind the plan of conduct
residence A .emergency this in pursue to her become would it that
in Turkey was abhorrent to her; her religion and her feelings were
into fell which father her of papers some By .it to averse alike
her hands she heard of the exile of her lover and learnt the name
,time some hesitated She .resided then he where spot the of
but at length she formed her determination. Taking with her
quitted she ,money of sum a and her to belonged that jewels some
Italy with an attendant, a native of Leghorn, but who understood
.Germany for departed and ,Turkey of language common the

"She arrived in safety at a town about twenty leagues from the
.ill dangerously fell attendant her when ,Lacey De of cottage
Safie nursed her with the most devoted affection, but the poor girl died,
of language the with unacquainted ,alone left was Arabian the and
the country and utterly ignorant of the customs of the world.
mentioned had Italian The .hands good into ,however ,fell She
the name of the spot for which they were bound, and after her
care took lived had they which in house the of woman the death
that Safie should arrive in safety at the cottage of her lover."

Chapter 15

"Such was the history of my beloved cottagers. It impressed me deeply. I developed it which life social of views the from I learned I to admire their virtues and to deprecate the vices of mankind.

"As yet I looked upon crime as a distant evil, benevolence and desire a me within inciting me before present ever were generosity to become an actor in the busy scene where so many admirable qualities progress the of account an giving in But displayed and forth called were of my intellect, I must not omit a circumstance which occurred in the year same the of August of month the of beginning

"One night during my accustomed visit to the neighbouring wood, protectors my for firing home brought and food own my collected I where I found on the ground a leathern portmanteau containing several articles it with returned and prize the seized eagerly I books some and dress of to my hovel. Fortunately the books were written in the language, consisted they; cottage the at acquired had I which of elements the of Paradise Lost, a volume of Plutarch's Lives, and the Sorrows of Werter. continually now I; delight extreme me gave treasures these of possession The studied and exercised my mind upon these histories, whilst my friends were occupations ordinary their in employed

"I can hardly describe to you the effect of these books. feelings and images new of infinity an me in produced They that sometimes raised me to ecstasy, but more frequently sunk me the besides, Werter of Sorrows the In dejection lowest the into interest of its simple and affecting story, so many opinions are to been hitherto had what upon thrown lights many so and canvassed me obscure subjects that I found in it a never-ending source of it manners domestic and gentle The astonishment and speculation described, combined with lofty sentiments and feelings, which had my with well accorded, self of out something object their for experience among my protectors and with the wants which were himself Werter thought I But bosom own my in alive forever a more divine being than I had ever beheld or imagined; deep sank it but pretension no contained character his

Frankenstein

The disquisitions upon death and suicide were calculated into enter to pretend not did I .wonder with me fill to the merits of the case, yet I inclined towards the opinions precisely without ,wept I extinction whose ,hero the of understanding it.

"As I read, however, I applied much personally to my own feelings strangely time same the at yet similar myself found I .condition and unlike to the beings concerning whom I read and to whose conversation ,them understood partly and with sympathized I .listener a was I but I was unformed in mind; I was dependent on none and related to none. lament to none was there and ",free was departure my of path The" my annihilation. My person was hideous and my stature gigantic. ?come I did Whence ?I was What ?I was Who ?mean this did What What was my destination? These questions continually recurred, .them solve to unable was I but

"The volume of Plutarch's Lives which I possessed contained .republics ancient the of founders first the of histories the This book had a far different effect upon me from the Sorrows of Werter. Plutarch but ,gloom and despondency imaginations 'Werter from learned I taught me high thoughts; he elevated me above the wretched sphere of .ages past of heroes the love and admire to ,reflections own my Many things I read surpassed my understanding and experience. ,country of extents wide ,kingdoms of knowledge confused very a had I mighty rivers, and boundless seas. But I was perfectly unacquainted protectors my of cottage The .men of assemblages large and towns with had been the only school in which I had studied human nature, but this men of read I .action of scenes mightier and new developed book concerned in public affairs, governing or massacring their species. abhorrence and ,me within rise virtue for ardour greatest the felt I for vice, as far as I understood the signification of those terms, .alone pain and pleasure to ,them applied I as ,were they as relative Induced by these feelings, I was of course led to admire peaceable lawgivers, .Theseus and Romulus to preference in ,Lycurgus and ,Solon ,Numa The patriarchal lives of my protectors caused these impressions to to introduction first my if ,perhaps ;mind my on hold firm a take humanity had been made by a young soldier, burning for glory and .sensations different with imbued been have should I ,slaughter

"But Paradise Lost excited different and far deeper emotions. My hands were into fallen had which volumes other the read had I as, it read I as a true history. It moved every feeling of wonder and awe that the picture exciting of capable was creatures his with warring God omnipotent an of I often referred the several situations, as their similarity struck me, other any to link no by united apparently was I, Adam Like. own my to being in existence; but his state was far different from mine in every creature perfect a God of hands the from forth come had He. respect other happy and prosperous, guarded by the especial care of his Creator; beings from knowledge acquire and with converse to allowed was he of a superior nature, but I was wretched, helpless, and alone. condition my of emblem fitter the as Satan considered I times Many for often, like him, when I viewed the bliss of my protectors, me within rose envy of gall bitter the

"Another circumstance strengthened and confirmed these feelings. the in papers some discovered I hovel the in arrival my after Soon pocket of the dress which I had taken from your laboratory. At first characters the decipher to able was I that now but, them neglected had I in which they were written, I began to study them with diligence. creation my preceded that months four the of journal your was It You minutely described in these papers every step you took in the of accounts with mingled was history this; work your of progress domestic occurrences. You doubtless recollect these papers. bears which them in related is Everything. are they Here reference to my accursed origin; the whole detail of that series; view in set is it produced which circumstances disgusting of the minutest description of my odious and loathsome person is given, indelible mine rendered and horrors own your painted which language in I sickened as I read. 'Hateful day when I received life!' I exclaimed hideous so monster a form you did Why! creator Accursed` agony in that even YOU turned from me in disgust? God, in pity, made man a is form my but; image own his after, alluring and beautiful filthy type of yours, more horrid even from the very resemblance. him encourage and admire to, devils fellow, companions his had Satan but I am solitary and abhorred.'

Frankenstein

"These were the reflections of my hours of despondency and solitude; amiable their ,cottagers the of virtues the contemplated I when but and benevolent dispositions, I persuaded myself that when they virtues their of admiration my with acquainted become should they would compassionate me and overlook my personal deformity. ,monstrous however ,one door their from turn they Could who solicited their compassion and friendship? I resolved, an for myself fit to way every in but ,despair to not ,least at interview with them which would decide my fate. I postponed this its to attached importance the for ,longer months some for attempt success inspired me with a dread lest I should fail. Besides, I 'day every with much so improved understanding my that found experience that I was unwilling to commence this undertaking until .sagacity my to added have should months more few a

"Several changes, in the meantime, took place in the cottage. ,inhabitants its among happiness diffused Safie of presence The and I also found that a greater degree of plenty reigned there. ,conversation and amusement in time more spent Agatha and Felix and were assisted in their labours by servants. They did not feelings their ;happy and contented were they but ,rich appear were serene and peaceful, while mine became every day more tumultuous. wretched a what clearly more me to discovered only knowledge of Increase outcast I was. I cherished hope, it is true, but it vanished when ,moonshine the in shadow my or water in reflected person my beheld I even as that frail image and that inconstant shade.

"I endeavoured to crush these fears and to fortify myself for the I sometimes and ;undergo to resolved I months few a in which trial allowed my thoughts, unchecked by reason, to ramble in the fields creatures lovely and amiable fancy to dared and ,Paradise of sympathizing with my feelings and cheering my gloom; their angelic ;dream a all was it But .consolation of smiles breathed countenances no Eve soothed my sorrows nor shared my thoughts; I was alone. ?mine was where But .Creator his to supplication 'Adam remembered I He had abandoned me, and in the bitterness of my heart I cursed him.

Frankenstein

"Autumn passed thus. I saw, with surprise and grief, the leaves decay
it appearance bleak and barren the assume again nature and ,fall and
had worn when I first beheld the woods and the lovely moon. Yet I did
my by fitted better was I ;weather the of bleakness the heed not
conformation for the endurance of cold than heat. But my chief
the all and ,birds the ,flowers the of sight the were delights
gay apparel of summer; when those deserted me, I turned with more
decreased not was happiness Their .cottagers the towards attention
by the absence of summer. They loved and sympathized with one another;
the by interrupted not were ,other each on depending ,joys their and
casualties that took place around them. The more I saw of them,
;kindness and protection their claim to desire my became greater the
my heart yearned to be known and loved by these amiable creatures;
was affection with me towards directed looks sweet their see to
the utmost limit of my ambition. I dared not think that they would
stopped that poor The .horror and disdain with me from them turn
at their door were never driven away. I asked, it is true, for
kindness required I :rest or food little a than treasures greater
and sympathy; but I did not believe myself utterly unworthy of it.

"The winter advanced, and an entire revolution of the seasons had
was time this at attention My .life into awoke I since place taken
solely directed towards my plan of introducing myself into the
on that but ,projects many revolved I .protectors my of cottage
which I finally fixed was to enter the dwelling when the blind old
the that discover to enough sagacity had I .alone be should man
unnatural hideousness of my person was the chief object of horror
,harsh although ,voice My .me beheld formerly had who those with
had nothing terrible in it; I thought, therefore, that if in the absence
,Lacey De old the of mediation and will good the gain could I children his of
I might by his means be tolerated by my younger protectors.

"One day, when the sun shone on the red leaves that strewed the
,Safie ,warmth denied it although ,cheerfulness diffused and ground
Agatha, and Felix departed on a long country walk, and the old man,
children his When .cottage the in alone left was ,desire own his at
had departed, he took up his guitar and played several mournful
him heard ever had I than mournful and sweet more ,airs sweet but
play before. At first his countenance was illuminated with pleasure,

Frankenstein

,length at ;succeeded sadness and thoughtfulness ,continued he as but laying aside the instrument, he sat absorbed in reflection.

"My heart beat quick; this was the hour and moment of trial, which gone were servants The .fears my realize or hopes my decide would to a neighbouring fair. All was silent in and around the cottage; execute to proceeded I when ,yet ;opportunity excellent an was it my plan, my limbs failed me and I sank to the ground. Again I rose, the removed ,master was I which of firmness the all exerting and planks which I had placed before my hovel to conceal my retreat. I determination renewed with and ,me revived air fresh The approached the door of their cottage.

"I knocked. `Who is there?' said the old man. `Come in.'

"I entered. `Pardon this intrusion,' said I; `I am a traveller in would you if me oblige greatly would you ;rest little a of want allow me to remain a few minutes before the fire.'

"`Enter,' said De Lacey, `and I will try in what manner I can to ,home from are children my ,unfortunately ,but ;wants your relieve and as I am blind, I am afraid I shall find it difficult to procure '.you for food

"`Do not trouble yourself, my kind host; I have food; it is warmth '.need I that only rest and

"I sat down, and a silence ensued. I knew that every minute manner what in irresolute remained I yet ,me to precious was to commence the interview, when the old man addressed me. ;countryman my are you suppose I ,stranger ,language your By` are you French?'

"`No; but I was educated by a French family and understand that ,friends some of protection the claim to going now am I .only language whom I sincerely love, and of whose favour I have some hopes.'

"`Are they Germans?'

Frankenstein

"No, they are French. But let us change the subject. I am an
no have I and around look I ,creature deserted and unfortunate
relation or friend upon earth. These amiable people to whom I go
,fears of full am I .me of little know and me seen never have
for if I fail there, I am an outcast in the world forever.'

"Do not despair. To be friendless is indeed to be unfortunate,
-self obvious any by unprejudiced when ,men of hearts the but
are full of brotherly love and charity. Rely, therefore, on your hopes;
'despair not do ,amiable and good are friends these if and

"They are kind--they are the most excellent creatures in the world; but,
;dispositions good have I .me against prejudiced are they ,unfortunately
my life has been hitherto harmless and in some degree beneficial;
see to ought they where and ,eyes their clouds prejudice fatal a but
a feeling and kind friend, they behold only a detestable monster.'

"That is indeed unfortunate; but if you are really blameless,
'?them undeceive you cannot

"I am about to undertake that task; and it is on that account that
;friends these love tenderly I .terrors overwhelming many so feel I
I have, unknown to them, been for many months in the habits of daily
,them injure to wish I that believe they but ;them towards kindness
and it is that prejudice which I wish to overcome.'

"Where do these friends reside?'

"Near this spot.'

"The old man paused and then continued, `If you will unreservedly
use of be may perhaps I ,tale your of particulars the me to confide
in undeceiving them. I am blind and cannot judge of your countenance,
.sincere are you that me persuades which words your in something is there but
I am poor and an exile, but it will afford me true pleasure to be in any way
'creature human a to serviceable

Frankenstein

"Excellent man! I thank you and accept your generous offer. that trust I and ;kindness this by dust the from me raise You by your aid, I shall not be driven from the society and sympathy 'creatures fellow your of

"Heaven forbid! Even if you were really criminal, for that can .virtue to you instigate not and ,desperation to you drive only I also am unfortunate; I and my family have been condemned, although 'misfortunes your for feel not do I if ,therefore ,judge ;innocent

"How can I thank you, my best and only benefactor? From your lips ;me towards directed kindness of voice the heard I have first I shall be forever grateful; and your present humanity assures me 'meeting of point the on am I whom friends those with success of

"May I know the names and residence of those friends?" "I paused. of me rob to was which ,decision of moment the was ,thought I ,This or bestow happiness on me forever. I struggled vainly for firmness remaining my all destroyed effort the but ,him answer to sufficient strength; I sank on the chair and sobbed aloud. At that moment ,lose to moment a not had I .protectors younger my of steps the heard I but seizing the hand of the old man, I cried, `Now is the time! .seek I whom friends the are family your and You !me protect and Save Do not you desert me in the hour of trial!"

"Great God!" exclaimed the old man. `Who are you?"

"At that instant the cottage door was opened, and Felix, Safie, and on consternation and horror their describe can Who .entered Agatha beholding me? Agatha fainted, and Safie, unable to attend to her with and ,forward darted Felix .cottage the of out rushed ,friend supernatural force tore me from his father, to whose knees I clung, me struck and ground the to me dashed he ,fury of transport a in violently with a stick. I could have torn him limb from limb, as with as me within sank heart my But .antelope the rends lion the bitter sickness, and I refrained. I saw him on the point of quitted I ,anguish and pain by overcome ,when ,blow his repeating the cottage, and in the general tumult escaped unperceived to my hovel."

Chapter 16

"Cursed, cursed creator! Why did I live? Why, in that instant, so had you which existence of spark the extinguish not I did wantonly bestowed? I know not; despair had not yet taken .revenge and rage of those were feelings my ;me of possession I could with pleasure have destroyed the cottage and its inhabitants .misery and shrieks their with myself glutted have and

"When night came I quitted my retreat and wandered in the wood; to vent gave I ,discovery of fear the by restrained longer no ,now and my anguish in fearful howlings. I was like a wild beast that had and me obstructed that objects the destroying ,toils the broken ranging through the wood with a staglike swiftness. Oh! What a the and ,mockery in shone stars cold The !passed I night miserable bare trees waved their branches above me; now and then the sweet .stillness universal the amidst forth burst bird a of voice All, save I, were at rest or in enjoyment; I, like the arch-fiend, to wished ,with unsympathized myself finding and ,me within hell a bore tear up the trees, spread havoc and destruction around me, and then .ruin the enjoyed and down sat have to

"But this was a luxury of sensation that could not endure; I became grass damp the on sank and exertion bodily of excess with fatigued in the sick impotence of despair. There was none among the myriads feel I should and ;me assist or pity would who existed that men of kindness towards my enemies? No; from that moment I declared him against ,all than more and ,species the against war everlasting who had formed me and sent me forth to this insupportable misery.

"The sun rose; I heard the voices of men and knew that it was I Accordingly .day that during retreat my to return to impossible hid myself in some thick underwood, determining to devote the .situation my on reflection to hours ensuing

"The pleasant sunshine and the pure air of day restored me to some degree ,cottage the at passed had what considered I when and ;tranquillity of I could not help believing that I had been too hasty in my conclusions.

Frankenstein

conversation my that apparent was It .imprudently acted certainly had I had interested the father in my behalf, and I was a fool in having exposed the familiarized have to ought I .children his of horror the to person my old De Lacey to me, and by degrees to have discovered myself to the rest .approach my for prepared been have should they when ,family his of But I did not believe my errors to be irretrievable, and after much ,man old the seek ,cottage the to return to resolved I consideration and by my representations win him to my party.

"These thoughts calmed me, and in the afternoon I sank into a profound sleep; .dreams peaceful by visited be to me allow not did blood my of fever the but The horrible scene of the preceding day was forever acting before my eyes; the .feet 'father his from me tearing Felix enraged the and flying were females I awoke exhausted, and finding that it was already night, I crept forth .food of search in went and -hiding my from

"When my hunger was appeased, I directed my steps towards the well- .peace at was there All .cottage the to conducted that path known I crept into my hovel and remained in silent expectation of the sun the ,passed hour That .arose family the when hour accustomed mounted high in the heavens, but the cottagers did not appear. .misfortune dreadful some apprehending ,violently trembled I The inside of the cottage was dark, and I heard no motion; .suspense this of agony the describe cannot I

"Presently two countrymen passed by, but pausing near the cottage, ;gesticulations violent using ,conversation into entered they but I did not understand what they said, as they spoke the .protectors my of that from differed which ,country the of language Soon after, however, Felix approached with another man; I was surprised, ,morning that cottage the quitted not had he that knew I as and waited anxiously to discover from his discourse the meaning .appearances unusual these of

"'Do you consider,' said his companion to him, `that you will be obliged ?garden your of produce the lose to and rent 'months three pay to I do not wish to take any unfair advantage, and I beg therefore '.determination your of consider to days some take will you that

Frankenstein

"It is utterly useless," replied Felix; "we can never again inhabit the cottage your father my life. The danger greatest in is owing to the dreadful circumstance that I have related. My wife entreats I never will recover from their horror. My sister and you not to reason with me any more. Take possession of your place this from fly me let and tenement"

"Felix trembled violently as he said this. He and his companion entered the cottage in which they remained for a few minutes and then departed. I never saw any of the family of De Lacey more.

"I continued for the remainder of the day in my hovel in a state of broken heart and departed had protectors My despair stupid and utter the only link that held me to the world. For the first time the strive not did I and my bosom filled with hatred and revenge of feelings to control them, but allowing myself to be borne away by the stream, my friends of thought I When death and injury towards mind my bent I of the mild voice of De Lacey, the gentle eyes of Agatha, and the a and vanished thoughts these Arabian the of beauty exquisite gush of tears somewhat soothed me. But again when I reflected and anger of rage a returned anger me deserted and spurned had they that unable to injure anything human, I turned my fury towards inanimate objects. As night advanced I placed a variety of combustibles around the cottage and after having destroyed every vestige of cultivation in the garden, I waited until the moon had sunk to commence my operations with impatience forced with

"As the night advanced, a fierce wind arose from the woods and the clouds dispersed quickly in the heavens. That blast tore along like a mighty avalanche and produced a kind of reflection and reason of bounds all burst that spirits my in insanity I lighted the dry branch of a tree and danced with fury around the edge the horizon western the on fixed still eyes my cottage devoted of which the moon nearly touched. A part of its orb was at length hid, and I screamed loudly with it and brand my waved I and straw the fired I and heath, and bushes, which I had collected. The wind fanned the fire, it to clung which flames the by enveloped quickly was cottage the and and licked it with their forked and destroying tongues.

Frankenstein

"As soon as I was convinced that no assistance could save any part of the woods the in refuge for sought and scene the quitted I ,habitation the

"And now, with the world before me, whither should I bend my steps? me to but ;misfortunes my of scene the from far fly to resolved I hated and despised, every country must be equally horrible. your from learned I .mind my crossed you of thought the length At papers that you were my father, my creator; and to whom could I ?life me given had who him to than fitness more with apply Among the lessons that Felix had bestowed upon Safie, geography situations relative the these from learned had I ;omitted been not had of the different countries of the earth. You had mentioned Geneva resolved I place this towards and ,town native your of name the as to proceed.

"But how was I to direct myself? I knew that I must travel in a my was sun the but ,destination my reach to direction southwesterly only guide. I did not know the names of the towns that I was to ;being human single a from information ask I could nor ,through pass but I did not despair. From you only could I hope for succour, .hatred of that but sentiment no felt I you towards although Unfeeling, heartless creator! You had endowed me with perceptions and scorn the for object an abroad me cast then and passions and horror of mankind. But on you only had I any claim for pity and redress, attempted vainly I which justice that seek to determined I you from and to gain from any other being that wore the human form.

"My travels were long and the sufferings I endured intense. It was .resided long so had I where district the quitted I when autumn in late I travelled only at night, fearful of encountering the visage of a ;heatless became sun the and ,me around decayed Nature .being human rain and snow poured around me; mighty rivers were frozen; the surface .shelter no found I and ,bare and ,chill and hard was earth the of Oh, earth! How often did I imprecate curses on the cause of my being! gall to turned was me within all and ,fled had nature my of mildness The and bitterness. The nearer I approached to your habitation, .heart my in enkindled revenge of spirit the feel I did deeply more the Snow fell, and the waters were hardened, but I rested not. A few ;country the of map a possessed I and ,me directed then and now incidents

Frankenstein

but I often wandered wide from my path. The agony of my feelings
rage my which from occurred incident no ;respite no me allowed
and misery could not extract its food; but a circumstance that
sun the when ,Switzerland of confines the on arrived I when happened
had recovered its warmth and the earth again began to look green,
.feelings my of horror and bitterness the manner especial an in confirmed

"I generally rested during the day and travelled only when I was
,however ,morning One .man of view the from night by secured
finding that my path lay through a deep wood, I ventured to
one was which ,day the ;risen had sun the after journey my continue
of the first of spring, cheered even me by the loveliness of its
gentleness of emotions felt I .air the of balminess the and sunshine
and pleasure, that had long appeared dead, revive within me.
allowed I ,sensations these of novelty the by surprised Half
myself to be borne away by them, and forgetting my solitude
,cheeks my bedewed again tears Soft .happy be to dared ,deformity and
and I even raised my humid eyes with thankfulness towards the blessed sun,
.me upon joy such bestowed which

"I continued to wind among the paths of the wood, until I came to
into ,river rapid and deep a by skirted was which ,boundary its
which many of the trees bent their branches, now budding with the
to path what knowing exactly not ,paused I Here .spring fresh
pursue, when I heard the sound of voices, that induced me to
hid scarcely was I .cypress a of shade the under myself conceal
when a young girl came running towards the spot where I was
.sport in someone from ran she if as ,laughing ,concealed
She continued her course along the precipitous sides of the river,
.stream rapid the into fell she and ,slipped foot her suddenly when
I rushed from my hiding-place and with extreme labour, from the force
,senseless was She .shore to her dragged and her saved ,current the of
and I endeavoured by every means in my power to restore animation,
was who ,rustic a of approach the by interrupted suddenly was I when
probably the person from whom she had playfully fled. On seeing me,
towards hastened ,arms my from girl the tearing and ,me towards darted he
the deeper parts of the wood. I followed speedily, I hardly knew why;
,carried he which ,gun a aimed he ,near draw me saw man the when but
at my body and fired. I sank to the ground, and my injurer, with

.wood the into escaped ,swiftness increased

"This was then the reward of my benevolence! I had saved a human the under writhed now I recompense a as and ,destruction from being miserable pain of a wound which shattered the flesh and bone. The a but entertained had I which gentleness and kindness of feelings few moments before gave place to hellish rage and gnashing of teeth. .mankind all to vengeance and hatred eternal vowed I ,pain by Inflamed But the agony of my wound overcame me; my pulses paused, and I fainted.

"For some weeks I led a miserable life in the woods, endeavouring my entered had ball The .received had I which wound the cure to shoulder, and I knew not whether it had remained there or passed sufferings My .it extracting of means no had I rate any at ;through were augmented also by the oppressive sense of the injustice and --revenge for rose vows daily My .infliction their of ingratitude a deep and deadly revenge, such as would alone compensate for the .endured had I anguish and outrages

"After some weeks my wound healed, and I continued my journey. sun bright the by alleviated be to longer no were endured I labours The or gentle breezes of spring; all joy was but a mockery which insulted made not was I that painfully more feel me made and state desolate my for the enjoyment of pleasure.

"But my toils now drew near a close, and in two months from this .Geneva of environs the reached I time

"It was evening when I arrived, and I retired to a hiding-place I manner what in meditate to it surround that fields the among should apply to you. I was oppressed by fatigue and hunger and far prospect the or evening of breezes gentle the enjoy to unhappy too of the sun setting behind the stupendous mountains of Jura.

"At this time a slight sleep relieved me from the pain of reflection, ,child beautiful a of approach the by disturbed was which who came running into the recess I had chosen, with all the ,him on gazed I as ,Suddenly .infancy of sportiveness an idea seized me that this little creature was unprejudiced

Frankenstein

.deformity of horror a imbibed have to time a short too lived had and
If, therefore, I could seize him and educate him as my companion
.earth peopled this in desolate so be not should I ,friend and

"Urged by this impulse, I seized on the boy as he passed and drew
hands his placed he ,form my beheld he as soon As .me towards him
before his eyes and uttered a shrill scream; I drew his hand
?this of meaning the is what ,Child` ,said and face his from forcibly
I do not intend to hurt you; listen to me.'

"He struggled violently. `Let me go,' he cried; `monster!
.pieces to me tear and me eat to wish You !wretch Ugly
You are an ogre. Let me go, or I will tell my papa.'

"`Boy, you will never see your father again; you must come with me.'

"`Hideous monster! Let me go. My papa is a syndic--he is
' .me keep not dare You .you punish will --Frankenstein .M

"`Frankenstein! you belong then to my enemy--to him towards whom
' .victim first my be shall you ;revenge eternal sworn have I

"The child still struggled and loaded me with epithets which
,him silence to throat his grasped I ;heart my to despair carried
and in a moment he lay dead at my feet.

"I gazed on my victim, and my heart swelled with exultation and
create can too I ,exclaimed I ,hands my clapping ;triumph hellish
desolation; my enemy is not invulnerable; this death will carry
and torment shall miseries other thousand a and ,him to despair
destroy him.'

"As I fixed my eyes on the child, I saw something glittering on
.woman lovely most a of portrait a was it ;it took I .breast his
In spite of my malignity, it softened and attracted me. For a few
deep by fringed ,eyes dark her on delight with gazed I moments
lashes, and her lovely lips; but presently my rage returned;
such that delights the of deprived forever was I that remembered I
beautiful creatures could bestow and that she whose resemblance

Frankenstein

air that changed have ,me regarding in ,would contemplated I
of divine benignity to one expressive of disgust and affright.

"Can you wonder that such thoughts transported me with rage?
sensations my venting of instead ,moment that at that wonder only I
in exclamations and agony, I did not rush among mankind and perish
.them destroy to attempt the in

"While I was overcome by these feelings, I left the spot where
-hiding secluded more a seeking and ,murder the committed had I
I entered a barn which had appeared to me to be empty. A woman was
as beautiful so indeed not ,young was she ;straw some on sleeping
her whose portrait I held, but of an agreeable aspect and blooming
of one is ,thought I ,Here .health and youth of loveliness the in
those whose joy-imparting smiles are bestowed on all but me.
,fairest ,Awake` ,whispered and her over bent I then And
thy lover is near--he who would give his life but to obtain
!awake ,beloved my ;eyes thine from affection of look one

"The sleeper stirred; a thrill of terror ran through me.
,me curse and ,me see and ,awake indeed she Should
and denounce the murderer? Thus would she assuredly act
.me beheld she and opened eyes darkened her if
The thought was madness; it stirred the fiend within me--not I,
am I because committed have I murder the ;suffer shall ,she but
forever robbed of all that she could give me, she shall atone.
!punishment the hers be ;her in source its had crime The
Thanks to the lessons of Felix and the sanguinary laws of man,
placed and her over bent I .mischief work to now learned had I
the portrait securely in one of the folds of her dress.
.fled I and ,again moved She

"For some days I haunted the spot where these scenes had taken place,
world the quit to resolved sometimes ,you see to wishing sometimes
and its miseries forever. At length I wandered towards these mountains,
burning a by consumed ,recesses immense their through ranged have and
passion which you alone can gratify. We may not part until you have
;miserable and alone am I .requisition my with comply to promised
man will not associate with me; but one as deformed and horrible

Frankenstein

the of be must companion My .me to herself deny not would myself as
same species and have the same defects. This being you must create."

Chapter 17

The being finished speaking and fixed his looks upon me in the
and ,perplexed ,bewildered was I But .reply a of expectation
unable to arrange my ideas sufficiently to understand the full
,continued He .proposition his of extent

"You must create a female for me with whom I can live in the
.being my for necessary sympathies those of interchange
This you alone can do, and I demand it of you as a right
".concede to refuse not must you which

The latter part of his tale had kindled anew in me the anger that
,cottagers the among life peaceful his narrated he while away died had
and as he said this I could no longer suppress the rage that
.me within burned

"I do refuse it," I replied; "and no torture shall ever extort a
but ,men of miserable most the me render may You .me from consent
you shall never make me base in my own eyes. Shall I create another
!Begone .world the desolate might wickedness joint whose ,yourself like
I have answered you; you may torture me, but I will never consent."

"You are in the wrong," replied the fiend; "and instead of threatening,
.miserable am I because malicious am I .you with reason to content am I
Am I not shunned and hated by all mankind? You, my creator, would tear
pity should I why me tell and ,that remember ;triumph and pieces to me
man more than he pities me? You would not call it murder if you could
,frame my destroy and -ice those of one into me precipitate
the work of your own hands. Shall I respect man when he condemns me?
injury of instead and ,kindness of interchange the in me with live him Let
I would bestow every benefit upon him with tears of gratitude at
are senses human the ;be cannot that But .acceptance his
insurmountable barriers to our union. Yet mine shall not be the
I if ;injuries my revenge will I .slavery abject of submission
cannot inspire love, I will cause fear, and chiefly towards you my
.hatred inextinguishable swear I do ,creator my because ,archenemy
Have a care; I will work at your destruction, nor finish until I

Frankenstein

"birth your of hour the curse shall you that so ,heart your desolate

A fiendish rage animated him as he said this; his face was wrinkled presently but ;behold to eyes human for horrible too contortions into he calmed himself and proceeded--

"I intended to reason. This passion is detrimental to me, .excess its of cause the are YOU that reflect not do you for If any being felt emotions of benevolence towards me, that for ;hundredfold a and hundred a them return should I one creature's sake I would make peace with the whole kind! .realized be cannot that bliss of dreams in indulge now I But What I ask of you is reasonable and moderate; I demand a creature ,small is gratification the ;myself as hideous as but ,sex another of but it is all that I can receive, and it shall content me. It is true, account that on but ;world the all from off cut ,monsters be shall we we shall be more attached to one another. Our lives will not be happy, !Oh .feel now I misery the from free and harmless be will they but My creator, make me happy; let me feel gratitude towards you for one benefit! ;thing existing some of sympathy the excite I that see me Let do not deny me my request!"

I was moved. I shuddered when I thought of the possible some was there that felt I but ,consent my of consequences justice in his argument. His tale and the feelings he now did and ,sensations fine of creature a be to him proved expressed I not as his maker owe him all the portion of happiness that it was ,continued and feeling of change my saw He ?bestow to power my in

"If you consent, neither you nor any other human being shall .America South of wilds vast the to go will I ;again us see ever My food is not that of man; I do not destroy the lamb and the kid to .nourishment sufficient me afford berries and acorns ;appetite my glut My companion will be of the same nature as myself and will be content ;leaves dried of bed our make shall We .fare same the with the sun will shine on us as on man and will ripen our food. ,human and peaceful is you to present I picture The and you must feel that you could deny it only in the ,me towards been have you as Pitiless .cruelty and power of wantonness

Frankenstein

I now see compassion in your eyes; let me seize the favourable moment
".desire ardently so I what promise to you persuade and

"You propose," replied I, "to fly from the habitations of man,
your be will field the of beasts the where wilds those in dwell to
only companions. How can you, who long for the love and sympathy
seek again and return will You ?exile this in persevere ,man of
their kindness, and you will meet with their detestation; your evil
aid to companion a have then will you and ,renewed be will passions
you in the task of destruction. This may not be; cease to argue
".consent cannot I for ,point the

"How inconstant are your feelings! But a moment ago you were moved by
?complaints my to yourself harden again you do why and ,representations my
I swear to you, by the earth which I inhabit, and by you that made me,
man of neighbourhood the quit will I bestow you companion the with that
and dwell, as it may chance, in the most savage of places.
!sympathy with meet shall I for ,fled have will passions evil My
My life will flow quietly away, and in my dying moments I shall not
".maker my curse

His words had a strange effect upon me. I compassionated him and
,him upon looked I when but ,him console to wish a felt sometimes
when I saw the filthy mass that moved and talked, my heart sickened
.hatred and horror of those to altered were feelings my and
I tried to stifle these sensations; I thought that as I could not
the him from withhold to right no had I ,him with sympathize
small portion of happiness which was yet in my power to bestow.

"You swear," I said, "to be harmless; but have you not already shown
?you distrust me make reasonably should that malice of degree a
May not even this be a feint that will increase your triumph by
"?revenge your for scope wider a affording

"How is this? I must not be trifled with, and I demand an answer.
;portion my be must vice and hatred ,affections no and ties no have I If
the love of another will destroy the cause of my crimes,
.ignorant be will everyone existence whose of thing a become shall I and
My vices are the children of a forced solitude that I abhor,

.equal an with communion in live I when arise necessarily will virtues my and
I shall feel the affections of a sensitive being and became linked to the
".excluded now am I which from events and existence of chain

I paused some time to reflect on all he had related and the various
of promise the of thought I .employed had he which arguments
virtues which he had displayed on the opening of his existence and
and loathing the by feeling kindly all of blight subsequent the
scorn which his protectors had manifested towards him. His power
who creature a ;calculations my in omitted not were threats and
could exist in the ice caves of the glaciers and hide himself from
being a was precipices inaccessible of ridges the among pursuit
possessing faculties it would be vain to cope with. After a long
him to both due justice the that concluded I reflection of pause
and my fellow creatures demanded of me that I should comply with
,said I ,therefore ,him to Turning .request his

"I consent to your demand, on your solemn oath to quit Europe forever,
shall I as soon as ,man of neighbourhood the in place other every and
deliver into your hands a female who will accompany you in your exile."

"I swear," he cried, "by the sun, and by the blue sky of heaven,
grant you if that ,heart my burns that love of fire the by and
my prayer, while they exist you shall never behold me again.
their watch shall I ;labours your commence and home your to Depart
progress with unutterable anxiety; and fear not but that when you
".appear shall I ready are

Saying this, he suddenly quitted me, fearful, perhaps, of any
with mountain the descend him saw I .sentiments my in change
greater speed than the flight of an eagle, and quickly lost
.ice of sea the of undulations the among

His tale had occupied the whole day, and the sun was upon the verge
my hasten to ought I that knew I .departed he when horizon the of
descent towards the valley, as I should soon be encompassed in
of labour The .slow steps my and ,heavy was heart my but ;darkness
winding among the little paths of the mountain and fixing my feet
the by was I as occupied ,me perplexed advanced I as firmly

Frankenstein

emotions which the occurrences of the day had produced. Night was seated and -resting halfway the to came I when advanced far myself beside the fountain. The stars shone at intervals as the and ,me before rose pines dark the ;them over from passed clouds every here and there a broken tree lay on the ground; it was a .me within thoughts strange stirred and solemnity wonderful of scene I wept bitterly, and clasping my hands in agony, I exclaimed, "Oh! ye if ;me mock to about all are ye ,winds and clouds and Stars really pity me, crush sensation and memory; let me become as nought; ".darkness in me leave and ,depart ,depart ,not if but

These were wild and miserable thoughts, but I cannot describe to how and me upon weighed stars the of twinkling eternal the how you I listened to every blast of wind as if it were a dull ugly siroc .me consume to way its on

Morning dawned before I arrived at the village of Chamounix; I took heart own my in Even .Geneva to immediately returned but ,rest no I could give no expression to my sensations--they weighed on me agony my destroyed excess their and weight 'mountain a with beneath them. Thus I returned home, and entering the house, appearance wild and haggard My .family the to myself presented awoke intense alarm, but I answered no question, scarcely did I speak. claim to right no had I if --ban a under placed were I if as felt I their sympathies--as if never more might I enjoy companionship with them. resolved I ,them save to and ;adoration to them loved I thus even Yet to dedicate myself to my most abhorred task. The prospect of such me before pass existence of circumstance other every made occupation an like a dream, and that thought only had to me the reality of life.

Chapter 18

Day after day, week after week, passed away on my return to Geneva; feared I .work my recommence to courage the collect not could I and the vengeance of the disappointed fiend, yet I was unable to overcome that found I .me enjoined was which task the to repugnance my I could not compose a female without again devoting several months heard had I .disquisition laborious and study profound to of some discoveries having been made by an English philosopher, sometimes I and ,success my to material was which of knowledge the thought of obtaining my father's consent to visit England for this from shrank and delay of pretence every to clung I but ;purpose taking the first step in an undertaking whose immediate necessity taken had indeed change A .me to absolute less appear to began place in me; my health, which had hitherto declined, was now much my of memory the by unchecked when ,spirits my and ;restored unhappy promise, rose proportionably. My father saw this change method best the towards thoughts his turned he and ,pleasure with of eradicating the remains of my melancholy, which every now and overcast blackness devouring a with and ,fits by return would then the approaching sunshine. At these moments I took refuge in the a in alone lake the on days whole passed I .solitude perfect most little boat, watching the clouds and listening to the rippling of sun bright and air fresh the But .listless and silent ,waves the seldom failed to restore me to some degree of composure, and on my and smile readier a with friends my of salutations the met I return a more cheerful heart.

It was after my return from one of these rambles that my father, ,me addressed thus ,aside me calling

"I am happy to remark, my dear son, that you have resumed your you yet And .yourself to returning be to seem and pleasures former are still unhappy and still avoid our society. For some time I was idea an yesterday but ,this of cause the to as conjecture in lost struck me, and if it is well founded, I conjure you to avow it. down draw but ,useless only not be would point a such on Reserve treble misery on us all."

I trembled violently at his exordium, and my father continued--
your to forward looked always have I that ,son my ,confess I"
marriage with our dear Elizabeth as the tie of our domestic comfort
each to attached were You .years declining my of stay the and
other from your earliest infancy; you studied together, and appeared,
.another one to suited entirely ,tastes and dispositions in
But so blind is the experience of man that what I conceived
.it destroyed entirely have may plan my to assistants best the be to
You, perhaps, regard her as your sister, without any wish that she might
;love may you whom another with met have may you ,Nay .wife your become
and considering yourself as bound in honour to Elizabeth, this struggle
".feel to appear you which misery poignant the occasion may

"My dear father, reassure yourself. I love my cousin tenderly
,does Elizabeth as ,excited who woman any saw never I .sincerely and
my warmest admiration and affection. My future hopes and prospects
".union our of expectation the in up bound entirely are

"The expression of your sentiments of this subject, my dear Victor,
you If .experienced time some for have I than pleasure more me gives
feel thus, we shall assuredly be happy, however present events may
to appears which gloom this is it But .us over gloom a cast
have taken so strong a hold of your mind that I wish to dissipate.
immediate an to object you whether ,therefore ,me Tell
solemnization of the marriage. We have been unfortunate,
tranquillity everyday that from us drawn have events recent and
refitting my years and infirmities. You are younger; yet I do not
early an that ,fortune competent a of are you as possessed ,suppose
marriage would at all interfere with any future plans of honour and
I that ,however ,suppose not Do .formed have may you that utility
wish to dictate happiness to you or that a delay on your part would
candour with words my Interpret .uneasiness serious any me cause
and answer me, I conjure you, with confidence and sincerity."

I listened to my father in silence and remained for some time
a mind my in rapidly revolved I .reply any offering of incapable
multitude of thoughts and endeavoured to arrive at some conclusion.
was Elizabeth my with union immediate an of idea the me To !Alas

Frankenstein

one of horror and dismay. I was bound by a solemn promise
,did I if or ,break not dared and fulfilled yet not had I which
what manifold miseries might not impend over me and my devoted family!
hanging yet weight deadly this with festival a into enter I Could
round my neck and bowing me to the ground? I must perform my
I before mate his with depart monster the let and engagement
allowed myself to enjoy the delight of a union from which I
.peace expected

I remembered also the necessity imposed upon me of either
correspondence long a into entering or England to journeying
with those philosophers of that country whose knowledge and
.undertaking present my in me to use indispensable of were discoveries
The latter method of obtaining the desired intelligence was dilatory
aversion insurmountable an had I ,besides ;unsatisfactory and
to the idea of engaging myself in my loathsome task in my father's
.loved I those with intercourse familiar of habits in while house
I knew that a thousand fearful accidents might occur, the slightest
.horror with me with connected all thrill to tale a disclose would which of
I was aware also that I should often lose all self-command, all capacity
progress the during me possess would that sensations harrowing the hiding of
of my unearthly occupation. I must absent myself from all I loved
,achieved be quickly would it ,commenced Once .employed thus while
and I might be restored to my family in peace and happiness.
.forever depart would monster the ,fulfilled promise My
Or (so my fond fancy imaged) some accident might meanwhile occur
.forever slavery my to end an put and him destroy to

These feelings dictated my answer to my father. I expressed a wish
,request this of reasons true the concealing but ,England visit to
I clothed my desires under a guise which excited no suspicion,
my induced easily that earnestness an with desire my urged I while
father to comply. After so long a period of an absorbing melancholy
to glad was he ,effects and intensity its in madness resembled that
find that I was capable of taking pleasure in the idea of such a journey,
,return my before ,would amusement varied and scene of change that hoped he and
have restored me entirely to myself.

Frankenstein

The duration of my absence was left to my own choice; a few months, paternal One .contemplated period the was ,year a most at or kind precaution he had taken to ensure my having a companion. concert in ,had he ,me with communicating previously Without with Elizabeth, arranged that Clerval should join me at Strasbourg. of prosecution the for coveted I solitude the with interfered This my task; yet at the commencement of my journey the presence of my that rejoiced I truly and ,impediment an be way no in could friend thus I should be saved many hours of lonely, maddening reflection. .foe my of intrusion the and me between stand might Henry ,Nay If I were alone, would he not at times force his abhorred presence ?progress its contemplate to or task my of me remind to me on

To England, therefore, I was bound, and it was understood that my .return my on immediately place take should Elizabeth with union My father's age rendered him extremely averse to delay. For myself, --toils detested my from myself promised I reward one was there one consolation for my unparalleled sufferings; it was the prospect might I ,slavery miserable my from enfranchised ,when day that of claim Elizabeth and forget the past in my union with her.

I now made arrangements for my journey, but one feeling haunted me should I absence my During .agitation and fear with me filled which leave my friends unconscious of the existence of their enemy and .departure my by be might he as exasperated ,attacks his from unprotected But he had promised to follow me wherever I might go, and would he not ,itself in dreadful was imagination This ?England to me accompany but soothing inasmuch as it supposed the safety of my friends. reverse the that possibility the of idea the with agonized was I of this might happen. But through the whole period during which by governed be to myself allowed I creature my of slave the was I the impulses of the moment; and my present sensations strongly family my exempt and me follow would fiend the that intimated from the danger of his machinations.

It was in the latter end of September that I again quitted my Elizabeth and ,suggestion own my been had journey My .country native therefore acquiesced, but she was filled with disquiet at the idea .grief and misery of inroads the ,her from away ,suffering my of

Frankenstein

It had been her care which provided me a companion in Clerval-- which circumstances minute thousand a to blind is man a yet and call forth a woman's sedulous attention. She longed to bid me her rendered emotions conflicting thousand a ;return my hasten mute as she bade me a tearful, silent farewell.

I threw myself into the carriage that was to convey me away, hardly .around passing was what of careless and ,going was I whither knowing I remembered only, and it was with a bitter anguish that I reflected .me with go to packed be should instruments chemical my that order to ,it on Filled with dreary imaginations, I passed through many beautiful and only could I .unobserving and fixed were eyes my but ,scenes majestic think of the bourne of my travels and the work which was to occupy me .endured they whilst

After some days spent in listless indolence, during which I two waited I where ,Strasbourg at arrived I ,leagues many traversed days for Clerval. He came. Alas, how great was the contrast saw he when joyful ,scene new every to alive was He !us between the beauties of the setting sun, and more happy when he beheld it shifting the me to out pointed He .day new a recommence and rise colours of the landscape and the appearances of the sky. "This is ,you But !existence enjoy I how" ;cried he ",live to is it what my dear Frankenstein, wherefore are you desponding and sorrowful!" descent the saw neither and thoughts gloomy by occupied was I ,truth In of the evening star nor the golden sunrise reflected in the Rhine. ,Clerval of journal the with amused more far be would ,friend my ,you And who observed the scenery with an eye of feeling and delight, ,wretch miserable a ,I .reflections my to listening in than haunted by a curse that shut up every avenue to enjoyment.

We had agreed to descend the Rhine in a boat from Strasbourg to this During .London for shipping take might we whence ,Rotterdam voyage we passed many willowy islands and saw several beautiful towns. departure our from fifth the on and ,Mannheim at day a stayed We from Strasbourg, arrived at Mainz. The course of the Rhine descends river The .picturesque more much becomes Mainz below rapidly and winds between hills, not high, but steep, the on standing castles ruined many saw We .forms beautiful of and

edges of precipices, surrounded by black woods, high and inaccessible. The landscape variegated singularly presents, indeed, Rhine the of part This. In one spot you view rugged hills, ruined castles overlooking tremendous turn sudden the on and ;beneath rushing Rhine dark the with ,precipices of a promontory, flourishing vineyards with green sloping banks and a .scene the occupy towns populous and river meandering

We travelled at the time of the vintage and heard the song of the ,mind in depressed ,I Even .stream the down glided we as labourers and my spirits continually agitated by gloomy feelings, even I was the on gazed I as and ,boat the of bottom the at lay I .pleased cloudless blue sky, I seemed to drink in a tranquillity to which I can who ,sensations my were these if And .stranger a been long had describe those of Henry? He felt as if he had been transported .man by tasted seldom happiness a enjoyed and -fairy to "I have seen," he said, "the most beautiful scenes of my own country; snowy the where ,Uri and Lucerne of lakes the visited have I mountains descend almost perpendicularly to the water, casting and gloomy a cause would which ,shades impenetrable and black mournful appearance were it not for the most verdant islands that lake this seen have I ;appearance gay their by eye the believe agitated by a tempest, when the wind tore up whirlwinds of water great the on be must -water the what of idea an you gave and ocean; and the waves dash with fury the base of the mountain, where and avalanche an by overwhelmed were mistress his and priest the where their dying voices are still said to be heard amid the pauses and ,Valais La of mountains the seen have I ;wind nightly the of the Pays de Vaud; but this country, Victor, pleases me more than majestic more are Switzerland of mountains The .wonders those all and strange, but there is a charm in the banks of this divine river which castle that at Look .equalled saw before never I that overhangs yon precipice; and that also on the island, almost that now and ;trees lovely those of foliage the amongst concealed group of labourers coming from among their vines; and that the surely ,Oh .mountain the of recess the in hid half village spirit that inhabits and guards this place has a soul more in the to retire or glacier the pile who those than man with harmony inaccessible peaks of the mountains of our own country." your record to me delights it now Even !friend Beloved !Clerval

Frankenstein

words and to dwell on the praise of which you are so eminently
".nature of poetry very" the in formed being a was He .deserving
His wild and enthusiastic imagination was chastened by the
ardent with overflowed soul His .heart his of sensibility
affections, and his friendship was of that devoted and wondrous
the in only for look to us teach -world the that nature
imagination. But even human sympathies were not sufficient to
which ,nature external of scenery The .mind eager his satisfy
others regard only with admiration, he loved with ardour: --

-----The sounding cataract
,rock tall the :passion a like him Haunted
The mountain, and the deep and gloomy wood,
him to then were ,forms their and colours Their
An appetite; a feeling, and a love,
,charm remoter a of need no had That
By thought supplied, or any interest
.eye the from 'Unborrow

[Wordsworth's "Tintern Abbey".]

And where does he now exist? Is this gentle and lovely being lost
imagination, ideas with replete so ,mind this Has ?forever
fanciful and magnificent, which formed a world, whose existence
?perished mind this has-- ;creator its of life the on depended
Does it now only exist in my memory? No, it is not thus; your form
your but ,decayed has ,beauty with beaming and ,wrought divinely so
spirit still visits and consoles your unhappy friend.

Pardon this gush of sorrow; these ineffectual words are but a slight
,heart my soothe they but ,Henry of worth unexampled the to tribute
overflowing with the anguish which his remembrance creates.
.tale my with proceed will I

Beyond Cologne we descended to the plains of Holland; and we
was wind the for ,way our of remainder the post to resolved
contrary and the stream of the river was too gentle to aid us.

Frankenstein

,scenery beautiful from arising interest the lost here journey Our
but we arrived in a few days at Rotterdam, whence we proceeded by sea
,December of days latter the in ,morning clear a on was It .England to
that I first saw the white cliffs of Britain. The banks of the Thames
town every almost and ,fertile but flat were they ;scene new a presented
was marked by the remembrance of some story. We saw Tilbury Fort
--Greenwich and ,Woolwich ,Gravesend ,Armada Spanish the remembered and
places which I had heard of even in my country.

At length we saw the numerous steeples of London, St. Paul's
.history English in famed Tower the and ,all above towering

Chapter 19

London was our present point of rest; we determined to remain
 Clerval .city celebrated and wonderful this in months several
 desired the intercourse of the men of genius and talent who
 ;object secondary a me with was this but ,time this at flourished
 I was principally occupied with the means of obtaining the
 quickly and promise my of completion the for necessary information
 availed myself of the letters of introduction that I had brought with me,
 .philosophers natural distinguished most the to addressed

If this journey had taken place during my days of study and
 .pleasure inexpressible me afforded have would it ,happiness
 But a blight had come over my existence, and I only visited these
 the on me give might they information the of sake the for people
 subject in which my interest was so terribly profound. Company was
 of sights the with mind my fill could I ,alone when ;me to irksome
 heaven and earth; the voice of Henry soothed me, and I could thus
 ,uninteresting ,busy But .peace transitory a into myself cheat
 joyous faces brought back despair to my heart. I saw an insurmountable
 sealed was barrier this ;men fellow my and me between placed barrier
 with the blood of William and Justine, and to reflect on the events
 .anguish with soul my filled names those with connected

But in Clerval I saw the image of my former self; he was
 .instruction and experience gain to anxious and inquisitive
 The difference of manners which he observed was to him an
 also was He .amusement and instruction of source inexhaustible
 pursuing an object he had long had in view. His design was to
 its of knowledge his in had he that belief the in ,India visit
 various languages, and in the views he had taken of its society,
 European of progress the assisting materially of means the
 colonization and trade. In Britain only could he further the
 to check only the and ,busy forever was He .plan his of execution
 his enjoyments was my sorrowful and dejected mind. I tried to
 from him debar not might I that ,possible as much as this conceal
 the pleasures natural to one who was entering on a new scene of
 often I .recollection bitter or care any by undisturbed ,life

Frankenstein

refused to accompany him, alleging another engagement, that I might necessary materials the collect to began also now I .alone remain for my new creation, and this was to me like the torture of single that thought Every .head the on falling continually water of drops was devoted to it was an extreme anguish, and every word that I spoke .palpitate to heart my and ,quiver to lips my caused it to allusion in

After passing some months in London, we received a letter from a .Geneva at visitor our been formerly had who Scotland in person He mentioned the beauties of his native country and asked us if those journey our prolong to us induce to allurements sufficient not were as far north as Perth, where he resided. Clerval eagerly desired ,society abhorred I although ,I and ,invitation this accept to wished to view again mountains and streams and all the wondrous -dwelling chosen her adorns Nature which with works We had arrived in England at the beginning of October, and it was journey our commence to determined accordingly We .February now towards the north at the expiration of another month. In this to road great the follow to intend not did we expedition Edinburgh, but to visit Windsor, Oxford, Matlock, and the this of completion the at arrive to resolving ,lakes Cumberland tour about the end of July. I packed up my chemical instruments labours my finish to resolving ,collected had I materials the and in some obscure nook in the northern highlands of Scotland.

We quitted London on the 27th of March and remained a few days at to scene new a was This .forest beautiful its in rambling ,Windsor us mountaineers; the majestic oaks, the quantity of game, and the .us to novelties all were deer stately of herds

From thence we proceeded to Oxford. As we entered this city our been had that events the of remembrance the with filled were minds transacted there more than a century and a half before. It was had city This .forces his collected had I Charles that here remained faithful to him, after the whole nation had forsaken his memory The .liberty and Parliament of standard the join to cause of that unfortunate king and his companions, the amiable Falkland, to interest peculiar a gave ,son and ,queen his ,Goring insolent the every part of the city which they might be supposed to have inhabited.

Frankenstein

delighted we and, here dwelling a found days elder of spirit The
to trace its footsteps. If these feelings had not found an
yet had city the of appearance the, gratification imaginary
in itself sufficient beauty to obtain our admiration.
are streets the; picturesque and ancient are colleges The
almost magnificent; and the lovely Isis, which flows beside it
placid a into forth spread is, verdure exquisite of meadows through
expanse of waters, which reflects its majestic assemblage of towers,
.trees aged among embosomed, domes and, spires and

I enjoyed this scene, and yet my enjoyment was embittered
.future the of anticipation the and past the of memory the by both
I was formed for peaceful happiness. During my youthful days
overcome ever was I if and, mind my visited never discontent
by ennui, the sight of what is beautiful in nature or the study of
could man of productions the in sublime and excellent is what
always interest my heart and communicate elasticity to my spirits.
felt I and; soul my entered has bolt the; tree blasted a am I But
then that I should survive to exhibit what I shall soon cease to be--
and others to pitiable, humanity wrecked of spectacle miserable a
intolerable to myself.

We passed a considerable period at Oxford, rambling among its
relate might which spot every identify to endeavouring and environs
to the most animating epoch of English history. Our little voyages
that objects successive the by prolonged often were discovery of
presented themselves. We visited the tomb of the illustrious
my moment a For, fell patriot that which on field the and Hampden
soul was elevated from its debasing and miserable fears to
which of sacrifice self and liberty of ideas divine the contemplate
these sights were the monuments and the remembrancers. For an
a with me around look and chains my off shake to dared I instant
free and lofty spirit, but the iron had eaten into my flesh,
.self miserable my into, hopeless and trembling, again sank I and

We left Oxford with regret and proceeded to Matlock, which was our
this of neighbourhood the in country The, rest of place next
village resembled, to a greater degree, the scenery of Switzerland;
the want hills green the and, scale lower a on is everything but

crown of distant white Alps which always attend on the piny mountains
little the and cave wondrous the visited We .country native my of
cabinets of natural history, where the curiosities are disposed
.Chamounix and Servox at collections the in as manner same the in
The latter name made me tremble when pronounced by Henry,
terrible that which with ,Matlock quit to hastened I and
scene was thus associated.

From Derby, still journeying northwards, we passed two months in
among myself fancy almost now could I .Westmorland and Cumberland
the Swiss mountains. The little patches of snow which yet lingered
dashing the and ,lakes the ,mountains the of sides northern the on
of the rocky streams were all familiar and dear sights to me.
cheat to contrived almost who ,acquaintances some made we also Here
me into happiness. The delight of Clerval was proportionably greater
and ,talent of men of company the in expanded mind his ;mine than
he found in his own nature greater capacities and resources than he
associated he while possessed have to himself imagined have could
with his inferiors. "I could pass my life here," said he to me;
Switzerland regret scarcely should I mountains these among and"
and the Rhine."

But he found that a traveller's life is one that includes much pain
;stretch the on forever are feelings His .enjoyments its amidst
and when he begins to sink into repose, he finds himself obliged to
again which ,new something for pleasure in rests he which on that quit
engages his attention, and which also he forsakes for other novelties.

We had scarcely visited the various lakes of Cumberland
some for affection an conceived and Westmorland and
of the inhabitants when the period of our appointment with
.on travel to them left we and ,approached friend Scotch our
For my own part I was not sorry. I had now neglected my promise
.disappointment 'daemon the of effects the feared I and ,time some for
He might remain in Switzerland and wreak his vengeance on my relatives.
which from moment every at me tormented and me pursued idea This
I might otherwise have snatched repose and peace. I waited for
was I delayed were they if ;impatience feverish with letters my
miserable and overcome by a thousand fears; and when they arrived

Frankenstein

hardly I, father my or Elizabeth of superscription the saw I and
dared to read and ascertain my fate. Sometimes I thought that the
my murdering by remissness my expedite might and me followed fiend
companion. When these thoughts possessed me, I would not quit Henry
the from him protect to, shadow his as him followed but, moment a for
fancied rage of his destroyer. I felt as if I had committed some
,guiltless was I .me haunted which of consciousness the ,crime great
but I had indeed drawn down a horrible curse upon my head,
,crime of that as mortal as

I visited Edinburgh with languid eyes and mind; and yet that city
not did Clerval .being unfortunate most the interested have might
like it so well as Oxford, for the antiquity of the latter city was
new the of regularity and beauty the But .him to pleasing more
town of Edinburgh, its romantic castle and its environs, the most
the and ,Well 'Bernard .St ,Seat 'Arthur ,world the in delightful
Pentland Hills compensated him for the change and filled him with
the at arrive to impatient was I But .admiration and cheerfulness
termination of my journey.

We left Edinburgh in a week, passing through Coupar, St. Andrew's,
.us expected friend our where ,Perth to ,Tay the of banks the along and
But I was in no mood to laugh and talk with strangers or enter into
;guest a from expected humour good the with plans or feelings their
and accordingly I told Clerval that I wished to make the tour of Scotland
.rendezvous our be this let and ,yourself enjoy" ,I said ",you Do" .alone
I may be absent a month or two; but do not interfere with my motions,
;time short a for solitude and peace to me leave ;you entreat I
and when I return, I hope it will be with a lighter heart,
.temper own your to congenial more

Henry wished to dissuade me, but seeing me bent on this plan,
.often write to me entreated He .remonstrate to ceased
"I had rather be with you," he said, "in your solitary rambles,
,then ,hasten ;know not do I whom ,people Scotch these with than
my dear friend, to return, that I may again feel myself
".absence your in do cannot I which ,home at somewhat

Frankenstein

Having parted from my friend, I determined to visit some remote spot in Scotland, but that the monster followed me and would discover himself to me. With this resolution I traversed the northern highlands and fixed my labours on the most remote of the Orkneys. It was a place fitted for such a work, being hardly more than a high rocky island, whose sides were continually beaten upon by the waves. The soil was barren, scarcely affording pasture for a few miserable cows, and its inhabitants consisted of five persons, whose gaunt and scraggy limbs gave tokens of their miserable fare, which consisted of bread and vegetables. In such indulged they when, such luxuries, and even fresh water, was to be procured from the distant mainland, which was about five miles.

On the whole island there were but three miserable huts, and one contained the hired labourer. This I found vacant when I arrived, but but two rooms, and these exhibited all the squalidness of the most unplastered walls, in which the thatch had fallen. The penury was miserable, and the door was off its hinges. I ordered it to be repaired, which incident an possession took and, furniture some bought would doubtless have occasioned some surprise had not all the poverty squalid and want by benumbed been cottagers the of senses. As it was, I lived ungazed at and unmolested, hardly thanked, gave I which clothes and food of pittance the for so much does suffering blunt even the coarsest sensations of men.

In this retreat I devoted the morning to labour; but in the evening, when the weather permitted, I walked on the stony beach to listen to the waves as they roared and dashed at my feet. The scene was ever yet monotonous as it was in Switzerland; it was far different from this desolate and appalling landscape. Its hills are covered with vines and its cottages are scattered thickly in the plains. Its fair lakes reflect the gentle and blue sky, and when troubled by winds their tumult is but as the play of a lively infant when compared to the roarings of the ocean giant.

Frankenstein

In this manner I distributed my occupations when I first arrived, more day every became it ,labour my in proceeded I as but horrible and irksome to me. Sometimes I could not prevail on times other at and ,days several for laboratory my enter to myself I toiled day and night in order to complete my work. It was, first my During .engaged was I which in process filthy a ,indeed experiment, a kind of enthusiastic frenzy had blinded me to the the on fixed intently was mind my ;employment my of horror consummation of my labour, and my eyes were shut to the horror of heart my and ,blood cold in it to went I now But .proceedings my often sickened at the work of my hands.

Thus situated, employed in the most detestable occupation, my call instant an for could nothing where solitude a in immersed attention from the actual scene in which I was engaged, my spirits feared I moment Every .nervous and restless grew I ;unequal became to meet my persecutor. Sometimes I sat with my eyes fixed on the ground, much so I which object the encounter should they lest them raise to fearing dreaded to behold. I feared to wander from the sight of my fellow creatures .companion his claim to come should he alone when lest

In the mean time I worked on, and my labour was already considerably advanced. dared I which ,hope eager and tremulous a with completion its towards looked I not trust myself to question but which was intermixed with obscure forebodings .bosom my in sicken heart my made that evil of

Chapter 20

I sat one evening in my laboratory; the sun had set, and the moon was
 ,employment my for light sufficient not had I ;sea the from rising just
 and I remained idle, in a pause of consideration of whether I should
 unremitting an by conclusion its hasten or night the for labour my leave
 attention to it. As I sat, a train of reflection occurred to me which led me
 was I ,before years Three .doing now was I what of effects the consider to
 engaged in the same manner and had created a fiend whose unparalleled barbarity
 was I .remorse bitterest the with forever it filled and heart my desolated had
 now about to form another being of whose dispositions I was alike ignorant;
 ,delight and mate her than malignant more times thousand ten become might she
 for its own sake, in murder and wretchedness. He had sworn to quit the
 ,she and ;not had she but ,deserts in himself hide and man of neighbourhood
 who in all probability was to become a thinking and reasoning animal,
 .creation her before made compact a with comply to refuse might
 They might even hate each other; the creature who already lived
 greater a conceive not he might and ,deformity own his loathed
 abhorrence for it when it came before his eyes in the female form?
 ;man of beauty superior the to him from disgust with turn might also She
 she might quit him, and he be again alone, exasperated by the fresh
 if Even .species own his of one by deserted being of provocation
 they were to leave Europe and inhabit the deserts of the new world,
 daemon the which for sympathies those of results first the of one yet
 thirsted would be children, and a race of devils would be propagated
 man of species the of existence very the make might who earth the upon
 a condition precarious and full of terror. Had I right, for my own benefit,
 moved been before had I ?generations everlasting upon curse this inflict to
 by the sophisms of the being I had created; I had been struck senseless by his
 promise my of wickedness the ,time first the for ,now but ;threats fiendish
 burst upon me; I shuddered to think that future ages might curse me as their
 ,price the at peace own its buy to hesitated not had selfishness whose ,pest
 perhaps, of the existence of the whole human race.

I trembled and my heart failed within me, when, on looking up, I saw by the
 his wrinkled grin ghastly A .casement the at daemon the moon the of light
 lips as he gazed on me, where I sat fulfilling the task which he had allotted
 ,forests in loitered had he ;travels my in me followed had he ,Yes .me to

Frankenstein

hid himself in caves, or taken refuge in wide and desert heaths; and he now
.promise my of fulfillment the claim and progress my mark to came

As I looked on him, his countenance expressed the utmost extent of malice
creating of promise my on madness of sensation a with thought I .treachery and
another like to him, and trembling with passion, tore to pieces the thing on
future whose on creature the destroy me saw wretch The .engaged was I which
existence he depended for happiness, and with a howl of devilish despair and
.withdrew ,revenge

I left the room, and locking the door, made a solemn vow in my own
,steps trembling with ,then and ;labours my resume to never heart
I sought my own apartment. I was alone; none were near me to dissipate
most the of oppression sickening the from me relieve and gloom the
terrible reveries.

Several hours passed, and I remained near my window gazing on the sea;
nature all and ,hushed were winds the for ,motionless almost was it
reposed under the eye of the quiet moon. A few fishing vessels alone
sound the wafted breeze gentle the then and now and ,water the specked
of voices as the fishermen called to one another. I felt the silence,
ear my until ,profundity extreme its of conscious hardly was I although
was suddenly arrested by the paddling of oars near the shore, and a
.house my to close landed person

In a few minutes after, I heard the creaking of my door, as if some
;foot to head from trembled I .softly it open to endeavoured one
I felt a presentiment of who it was and wished to rouse one of the
overcome was I but ;mine from far not cottage a in dwelt who peasants
by the sensation of helplessness, so often felt in frightful dreams,
rooted was and ,danger impending an from fly to endeavour vain in you when
to the spot. Presently I heard the sound of footsteps along the passage;
.appeared dreaded I whom wretch the and ,opened door the

Shutting the door, he approached me and said in a smothered voice,
?intend you that it is what ;began you which work the destroyed have You"
Do you dare to break your promise? I have endured toil and misery;
,Rhine the of shores the along crept I ;you with Switzerland left I
among its willow islands and over the summits of its hills. I have

Frankenstein

.Scotland of deserts the among and England of heaths the in months many dwelt
I have endured incalculable fatigue, and cold, and hunger; do you dare destroy
"?hopes my

"Begone! I do break my promise; never will I create another like yourself,
".wickedness and deformity in equal

"Slave, I before reasoned with you, but you have proved yourself unworthy
yourself believe you ;power have I that Remember .condescension my of
miserable, but I can make you so wretched that the light of day will
"!obey ;master your am I but ,creator my are You .you to hateful be

"The hour of my irresolution is past, and the period of your power is arrived.
me confirm they but ;wickedness of act an do to me move cannot threats Your
in a determination of not creating you a companion in vice. Shall I,
death in is delight whose daemon a earth the upon loose set ,blood cool in
and wretchedness? Begone! I am firm, and your words will only exasperate
".rage my

The monster saw my determination in my face and gnashed his teeth in the
,bosom his for wife a find" ,he cried " ,man each Shall" .anger of impotence
and each beast have his mate, and I be alone? I had feelings of affection,
,hate may You !Man .scorn and detestation by requited were they and
but beware! Your hours will pass in dread and misery, and soon
.forever happiness your you from ravish must which fall will bolt the
Are you to be happy while I grovel in the intensity of my wretchedness?
,revenge remains revenge but ,passions other my blast can You
henceforth dearer than light or food! I may die, but first you,
.misery your on gazes that sun the curse shall ,tormentor and tyrant my
Beware, for I am fearless and therefore powerful. I will watch with the
repent shall you ,Man .venom its with sting may I that ,snake a of wiliness
of the injuries you inflict."

"Devil, cease; and do not poison the air with these sounds of malice.
.words beneath bend to coward no am I and ,you to resolution my declared have I
Leave me; I am inexorable."

"It is well. I go; but remember, I shall be with you on your wedding-night."

Frankenstein

I started forward and exclaimed, "Villain! Before you sign my death-warrant, safe yourself are you that sure be

I would have seized him, but he eluded me and quitted the house
boat his in him saw I moments few a In .precipitation ith
which shot across the waters with an arrowy swiftness
.waves the amidst lost soon was and

All was again silent, but his words rang in my ears. I burned with rage
.ocean the into him precipitate and peace my of murderer the pursue to
I walked up and down my room hastily and perturbed, while my imagination
not I had Why .me sting and torment to images thousand a up conjured
followed him and closed with him in mortal strife? But I had suffered
.mainland the towards course his directed had he and ,depart to him
I shuddered to think who might be the next victim sacrificed to his
words his of again thought I then And .revenge insatiate
"I WILL BE WITH YOU ON YOUR WEDDING-NIGHT." That, then,
.destiny my of fulfillment the for fixed period the was
In that hour I should die and at once satisfy and extinguish his malice.
beloved my of thought I when yet ;fear to me move not did prospect The
Elizabeth, of her tears and endless sorrow, when she should find
shed had I first the ,tears ,her from snatched barbarously so lover her
for many months, streamed from my eyes, and I resolved not to fall
.struggle bitter a without enemy my before

The night passed away, and the sun rose from the ocean; my feelings
rage of violence the when calmness called be may it if ,calmer became
sinks into the depths of despair. I left the house, the horrid scene
,sea the of beach the on walked and ,contention 'night last the of
which I almost regarded as an insuperable barrier between me and my fellow
.me across stole fact the prove should such that wish a ,nay ;creatures

I desired that I might pass my life on that barren rock, wearily,
.misery of shock sudden any by uninterrupted but ,true is it
If I returned, it was to be sacrificed or to see those whom I most
.created myself had I whom daemon a of grasp the under die loved

Frankenstein

I walked about the isle like a restless spectre, separated from all
noon became it When separation the in miserable and loved it
and the sun rose higher, I lay down on the grass and was overpowered
night preceding the of whole the awake been had I sleep deep a by
my nerves were agitated, and my eyes inflamed by watching and misery.
awoke I when and ;me refreshed sank now I which into sleep The
I again felt as if I belonged to a race of human beings like myself,
;composure greater with passed had what upon reflect to began I and
yet still the words of the fiend rang in my ears like a death-knell;
.reality a as oppressive and distinct yet ,dream a like appeared they

The sun had far descended, and I still sat on the shore,
oaten an with ,ravenous become had which ,appetite my satisfying
cake, when I saw a fishing-boat land close to me, and one of the
one and ,Geneva from letters contained it ;packet a me brought men
from Clerval entreating me to join him. He said that he was
from letters that ,was he where fruitlessly time his away wearing
the friends he had formed in London desired his return to complete
.enterprise Indian his for into entered had they negotiation the
He could not any longer delay his departure; but as his journey to
by ,conjectured now he than sooner even ,followed be might London
his longer voyage, he entreated me to bestow as much of my society
my leave to ,therefore ,me besought He .spare could I as him on
solitary isle and to meet him at Perth, that we might proceed
.life to me recalled degree a in letter This .together southwards
and I determined to quit my island at the expiration of two days.
I which on ,perform to task a was there ,departed I before ,Yet
shuddered to reflect; I must pack up my chemical instruments,
scene the been had which room the enter must I purpose that for and
of my odious work, and I must handle those utensils the sight of which
summoned I ,daybreak at ,morning next The .me to sickening was
sufficient courage and unlocked the door of my laboratory.
.destroyed had I whom ,creature -half the of remains The
lay scattered on the floor, and I almost felt as if I had mangled the
then and myself collect to paused I .being human a of flesh living
entered the chamber. With trembling hand I conveyed the instruments
relics the leave to not ought I that reflected I but ,room the of out
of my work to excite the horror and suspicion of the peasants;
,stones of quantity great a with ,basket a into them put accordingly I and

and laying them up, determined to throw them into the sea that very night; arranging and cleaning in employed ,beach the upon sat I meantime the in and my chemical apparatus.

Nothing could be more complete than the alteration that had taken .daemon the of appearance the of night the since feelings my in place I had before regarded my promise with a gloomy despair as a thing that, film a if as felt now I but ;fulfilled be must ,consequences whatever with had been taken from before my eyes and that I for the first time saw clearly. ;me to occur instant one for not did labours my renewing of idea The the threat I had heard weighed on my thoughts, but I did not reflect my in resolved had I .it avert could mine of act voluntary a that own mind that to create another like the fiend I had first made would banished I and ,selfishness atrocious most and basest the of act an be from my mind every thought that could lead to a different conclusion.

Between two and three in the morning the moon rose; and I then, four about out sailed ,skiff little a aboard basket my putting miles from the shore. The scene was perfectly solitary; a few .them from away sailed I but ,land towards returning were boats I felt as if I was about the commission of a dreadful crime and .creatures fellow my with encounter any anxiety shuddering with avoided At one time the moon, which had before been clear, was suddenly moment the of advantage took I and ,cloud thick a by overspread of darkness and cast my basket into the sea; I listened to the .spot the from away sailed then and sank it as sound gurgling The sky became clouded, but the air was pure, although chilled by and me refreshed it But .rising then was that breeze northeast the filled me with such agreeable sensations that I resolved to prolong ,position direct a in rudder the fixing and ,water the on stay my stretched myself at the bottom of the boat. Clouds hid the moon, as boat the of sound the only heard I and ,obscure was everything its keel cut through the waves; the murmur lulled me, and in a in remained I long how know not do I .soundly slept I time short this situation, but when I awoke I found that the sun had already continually waves the and ,high was wind The .considerably mounted threatened the safety of my little skiff. I found that the wind which from coast the from far me driven have must and northeast was I had embarked. I endeavoured to change my course but quickly

instantly be would boat the attempt the made again I if that found filled with water. Thus situated, my only resource was to drive .terror of sensations few a felt I that confess I .wind the before I had no compass with me and was so slenderly acquainted with the little of was sun the that world the of part this of geography benefit to me. I might be driven into the wide Atlantic and feel the in up swallowed be or starvation of tortures the all immeasurable waters that roared and buffeted around me. burning a of torment the felt and hours many out been already had I thirst, a prelude to my other sufferings. I looked on the heavens, be to only ,wind the before flew that clouds by covered were which replaced by others; I looked upon the sea; it was to be my grave. thought I " !fulfilled already is task your" ,exclaimed I " ,Fiend" of Elizabeth, of my father, and of Clerval -- all left behind, on .passions merciless and sanguinary his satisfy might monster the whom This idea plunged me into a reverie so despairing and frightful that ,forever me before closing of point the on is scene the when ,now even I shudder to reflect on it.

Some hours passed thus; but by degrees, as the sun declined towards sea the and breeze gentle a into away died wind the ,horizon the became free from breakers. But these gave place to a heavy swell; saw I suddenly when ,rudder the hold to able hardly and sick felt I a line of high land towards the south.

Almost spent, as I was, by fatigue and the dreadful suspense I rushed life of certainty sudden this ,hours several for endured like a flood of warm joy to my heart, and tears gushed from my eyes.

How mutable are our feelings, and how strange is that clinging love constructed I !misery of excess the in even life of have we another sail with a part of my dress and eagerly steered my course I as but ,appearance rocky and wild a had It .land the towards approached nearer I easily perceived the traces of cultivation. transported suddenly myself found and shore the near vessels saw I back to the neighbourhood of civilized man. I carefully traced the saw length at I which steeple a hailed and land the of windings issuing from behind a small promontory. As I was in a state of ,town the towards directly sail to resolved I ,debility extreme

as a place where I could most easily procure nourishment.
me with money had I Fortunately

As I turned the promontory I perceived a small neat town and a good harbour,
.escape unexpected my at joy with bounding heart my ,entered I which

As I was occupied in fixing the boat and arranging the sails,
much seemed They .spot the towards crowded people several
surprised at my appearance, but instead of offering me any
time other any at that gestures with together whispered ,assistance
might have produced in me a slight sensation of alarm. As it was,
therefore I and ,English spoke they that remarked merely I
addressed them in that language. "My good friends," said I,
and town this of name the me tell to as kind so be you will"
inform me where I am?"

"You will know that soon enough," replied a man with a hoarse voice.
,taste your to much prove not will that place a to come are you Maybe"
but you will not be consulted as to your quarters, I promise you."

I was exceedingly surprised on receiving so rude an answer from a stranger,
countenances angry and frowning the perceiving on disconcerted also was I and
of his companions. "Why do you answer me so roughly?" I replied.
strangers receive to Englishmen of custom the not is it Surely"
so inhospitably."

"I do not know," said the man, "what the custom of the English
".villains hate to Irish the of custom the is it but ,be may
While this strange dialogue continued, I perceived the crowd rapidly
,anger and curiosity of mixture a expressed faces Their .increase
which annoyed and in some degree alarmed me.

I inquired the way to the inn, but no one replied. I then moved forward,
,me surrounded and followed they as crowd the from arose sound murmuring a and
when an ill-looking man approaching tapped me on the shoulder and said,
".yourself of account an give to 'Kirwin .Mr to me follow must you ,sir ,Come"

"Who is Mr. Kirwin? Why am I to give an account of myself?
"?country free a this not Is

"Ay, sir, free enough for honest folks. Mr. Kirwin is a magistrate, was who gentleman a of death the of account an give to are you and found murdered here last night."

This answer startled me, but I presently recovered myself. followed I accordingly ;proved be easily could that ;innocent was I my conductor in silence and was led to one of the best houses in being but ,hunger and fatigue from sink to ready was I .town the surrounded by a crowd, I thought it politic to rouse all my strength, or apprehension into construed be might debility physical no that conscious guilt. Little did I then expect the calamity that was despair and horror in extinguish and me overwhelm to moments few a in all fear of ignominy or death. I must pause here, for it requires events frightful the of memory the recall to fortitude my all which I am about to relate, in proper detail, to my recollection.

Chapter 21

I was soon introduced into the presence of the magistrate, an old man, however, whose countenance looked He had manners mild and calm with a benevolent air, and with some degree of severity, and then, turning towards my conductors, on this occasion he appeared as a witness who asked me

About half a dozen men came forward; and, one being selected by the magistrate, he deposed that he had been fishing out at night before with his son and brother-in-law, Daniel Nugent, when, a strong northerly blast rising, they observed about ten o'clock that the port was very dark, and that the moon had not yet risen; as they had been accustomed to do, but as they had been accustomed, at a creek about two miles below, He and his companions first walked on carrying a part of the fishing tackle, and his companions followed him at some distance.

As he was proceeding along the sands, he struck his foot against something, and his companions came up to assist him, and by the light of their lantern they found that he had fallen on the body of a man who was dead. Their first supposition was that it was the corpse of some person who had been drowned and thrown on the shore by the waves, but on examination they found that the clothes were not wet and even that the body was not cold. They then carried it to the cottage of an old woman near the spot and endeavoured, but in vain, to restore it to life. It appeared to be a young man, about five and twenty years of age. He had apparently been strangled, but there was no sign of violence except a black mark on his neck.

The first part of this deposition did not in the least interest me, but when I mentioned that the mark was on the fingers of my brother and felt myself extremely agitated; my limbs trembled, and I was obliged to lean on a chair for support. My eyes came over a mist, and the magistrate observed me with a keen eye and of course drew an unfavourable augury from my manner.

Frankenstein

The son confirmed his father's account, but when Daniel Nugent was his of fall the before just that positively swore he called companion, he saw a boat, with a single man in it, at a short light the by judge could he as far as and ;shore the from distance of a few stars, it was the same boat in which I had just landed. at standing was and beach the near lived she that deposed woman A the door of her cottage, waiting for the return of the fishermen, when ,body the of discovery the of heard she before hour an about she saw a boat with only one man in it push off from that part of .found afterwards was corpse the where shore the

Another woman confirmed the account of the fishermen having brought bed a into it put They .cold not was it ;house her into body the and rubbed it, and Daniel went to the town for an apothecary, .gone quite was life but

Several other men were examined concerning my landing, and they ,night the during arisen had that wind north strong the with ,that agreed it was very probable that I had beaten about for many hours and had been .departed had I which from spot same the to nearly return to obliged Besides, they observed that it appeared that I had brought the body know to appear not did I as that likely was it and ,place another from the shore, I might have put into the harbour ignorant of the distance .corpse the deposited had I where place the from of town the of

Mr. Kirwin, on hearing this evidence, desired that I should be might it that ,interment for lay body the where room the into taken be observed what effect the sight of it would produce upon me. agitation extreme the by suggested probably was idea This I had exhibited when the mode of the murder had been described. ,persons other several and magistrate the by ,conducted accordingly was I to the inn. I could not help being struck by the strange ;night eventful this during place taken had that coincidences but, knowing that I had been conversing with several persons in the ,found been had body the that time the about inhabited had I island I was perfectly tranquil as to the consequences of the affair. .coffin the to up led was and lay corpse the where room the entered I How can I describe my sensations on beholding it? I feel yet moment terrible that on reflect I can nor ,horror with parched

Frankenstein

without shuddering and agony. The examination, the presence of the
when memory my from dream a like passed ,witnesses and magistrate
I saw the lifeless form of Henry Clerval stretched before me.
,exclaimed I ,body the on myself throwing and ,breath for gasped I
"Have my murderous machinations deprived you also, my dearest Henry,
;destiny their await victims other ;destroyed already have I Two ?life of
but you, Clerval, my friend, my benefactor--"

The human frame could no longer support the agonies that I endured,
fever A .convulsions strong in room the of out carried was I and
succeeded to this. I lay for two months on the point of death;
;frightful were ,heard afterwards I as ,ravings my
I called myself the murderer of William, of Justine, and of Clerval.
destruction the in me assist to attendants my entreated I Sometimes
of the fiend by whom I was tormented; and at others I felt the
aloud screamed and ,neck my grasping already monster the of fingers
with agony and terror. Fortunately, as I spoke my native language,
cries bitter and gestures my but ;me understood alone Kirwin .Mr
were sufficient to affright the other witnesses. Why did I not die?
into sink not I did why ,before was ever man than miserable More
forgetfulness and rest? Death snatches away many blooming children,
youthful and brides many how ;parents doting their of hopes only the
lovers have been one day in the bloom of health and hope, and the next
was materials what Of !tomb the of decay the and worms for prey a
I made that I could thus resist so many shocks, which, like the turning
?torture the renewed continually ,wheel the of

But I was doomed to live and in two months found myself as
,bed wretched a on stretched ,prison a in ,dream a from awaking
surrounded by jailers, turnkeys, bolts, and all the miserable
thus I when ,remember I ,morning was It .dungeon a of apparatus
awoke to understanding; I had forgotten the particulars of what had
suddenly had misfortune great some if as felt only and happened
overwhelmed me; but when I looked around and saw the barred windows
flashed all ,was I which in room the of squalidness the and
across my memory and I groaned bitterly.

This sound disturbed an old woman who was sleeping in a chair beside me.
,turnkeys the of one of wife the ,nurse hired a was She

Frankenstein

and her countenance expressed all those bad qualities
face her of lines The .class that characterize often which
were hard and rude, like that of persons accustomed to see without
her expressed tone Her .misery of sights in sympathizing
entire indifference; she addressed me in English, and the voice
.sufferings my during heard had I that one as me struck
"Are you better now, sir?" said she.

I replied in the same language, with a feeble voice, "I believe I am;
that sorry am I ,dream not did I indeed if ,true all be it if but
I am still alive to feel this misery and horror."

"For that matter," replied the old woman, "if you mean about the
if you for better were it that believe I ,murdered you gentleman
you were dead, for I fancy it will go hard with you! However,
;well you get and you nurse to sent am I ;business my of none 'that
I do my duty with a safe conscience; it were well if everybody
".same the did

I turned with loathing from the woman who could utter so unfeeling
;death of edge very the on ,saved just person a to speech a
but I felt languid and unable to reflect on all that had passed.
sometimes I ;dream a as me to appeared life my of series whole The
doubted if indeed it were all true, for it never presented itself
.reality of force the with mind my to

As the images that floated before me became more distinct, I grew
who me near was one no ;me around pressed darkness a ;feverish
soothed me with the gentle voice of love; no dear hand supported me.
woman old the and ,medicines prescribed and came physician The
prepared them for me; but utter carelessness was visible in the first,
visage the in marked strongly was brutality of expression the and
of the second. Who could be interested in the fate of a murderer
?fee his gain would who hangman the but

These were my first reflections, but I soon learned that Mr. Kirwin
the in room best the caused had He .kindness extreme me shown had
prison to be prepared for me (wretched indeed was the best);
,true is It .nurse a and physician a provided had who he was it and

Frankenstein

he seldom came to see me, for although he ardently desired to relieve present be to wish not did he ,creature human every of sufferings the at the agonies and miserable ravings of a murderer. He came, therefore, short were visits his but ,neglected not was I that see to sometimes and with long intervals. One day, while I was gradually recovering, like livid cheeks my and open half eyes my ,chair a in seated was I those in death. I was overcome by gloom and misery and often reflected me to which world a in remain to desire than death seek better had I was replete with wretchedness. At one time I considered whether ,law the of penalty the suffer and guilty myself declare not should I less innocent than poor Justine had been. Such were my thoughts when His .entered Kirwin .Mr and opened was apartment my of door the countenance expressed sympathy and compassion; he drew a chair place this that fear I" ,French in me addressed and mine to close is very shocking to you; can I do anything to make you more comfortable?"

"I thank you, but all that you mention is nothing to me; on the
".receiving of capable am I which comfort no is there earth whole

"I know that the sympathy of a stranger can be but of little relief
you But .misfortune a strange so by are you as down borne one to
will, I hope, soon quit this melancholy abode, for doubtless evidence
".charge criminal the from you free to brought be easily can

"That is my least concern; I am, by a course of strange events,
as tortured and Persecuted .mortals of miserable most the become
I am and have been, can death be any evil to me?"

"Nothing indeed could be more unfortunate and agonizing than the
some by ,thrown were You .occurred lately have that chances strange
surprising accident, on this shore, renowned for its hospitality,
that sight first The .murder with charged and ,immediately seized
was presented to your eyes was the body of your friend, murdered in
fiend some by ,were it as ,placed and manner a unaccountable so
across your path."

As Mr. Kirwin said this, notwithstanding the agitation I endured on
surprise considerable felt also I ,sufferings my of retrospect this
at the knowledge he seemed to possess concerning me. I suppose

Kirwin .Mr for ,countenance my in exhibited was astonishment some hastened to say, "Immediately upon your being taken ill, all the examined I and ,me brought were person your on were that papers them that I might discover some trace by which I could send to your found I .illness and misfortune your of account an relations several letters, and, among others, one which I discovered from its ;Geneva to wrote instantly I .father your from be to commencement nearly two months have elapsed since the departure of my letter. agitation for unfit are you ;tremble you now even ;ill are you But of any kind."

"This suspense is a thousand times worse than the most horrible event; am I murder whose and ,acted been has death of scene new what me tell now to lament?"

"Your family is perfectly well," said Mr. Kirwin with gentleness; ".you visit to come is ,friend a ,someone and"

I know not by what chain of thought the idea presented itself, but mock to come had murderer the that mind my into darted instantly it at my misery and taunt me with the death of Clerval, as a new my put I .desires hellish his with comply to me for incitement hand before my eyes, and cried out in agony, "Oh! Take him away! "!enter him let not do ,sake 'God for ;him see cannot I

Mr. Kirwin regarded me with a troubled countenance. He could not said and guilt my of presumption a as exclamation my regarding help in rather a severe tone, "I should have thought, young man, that the inspiring of instead welcome been have would father your of presence such violent repugnance."

"My father!" cried I, while every feature and every muscle was ,kind How ?come indeed father my Is" .pleasure to anguish from relaxed how very kind! But where is he, why does he not hasten to me?"

My change of manner surprised and pleased the magistrate; momentary a was exclamation former my that thought he perhaps return of delirium, and now he instantly resumed his former ,nurse my with room the quitted and rose He .benevolence

and in a moment my father entered it.

Nothing, at this moment, could have given me greater pleasure than to see my father on his arrival, stretched out on the sofa, and crying, "Are you, then, safe--and Elizabeth--and Ernest?" My father endeavoured to calm me with assurances of his welfare, but by dwelling on these subjects so interesting to my heart, he could not prevent me from feeling that I was in a prison, and that I should never see my dear friends again. My spirits desponding, I abode of cheerfulness.

"What a place is this that you inhabit, my son!" said he, his appearance wretched and his windows barred, he looked mournfully at the room. "You travelled to seek happiness, but a fatality has overtaken you. And you pursue to seem

The name of my unfortunate and murdered friend was an agitation to me. "Alas!" I shed tears; "my state is weak, and I cannot endure so great a trial. Yes, my father," replied I; "some destiny of the most horrible kind should I surely or it fulfil to live must I and me over hangs have died on the coffin of Henry."

We were not allowed to converse for any length of time, for the necessary precaution every day rendered my health of state precarious that could ensure tranquillity. Mr. Kirwin came in and insisted on my exertion much too by exhausted, but he should not strength my that. But the appearance of my father was to me like that of my good angel, and my health recovered gradually.

As my sickness quitted me, I was absorbed by a gloomy and black image of the future. The dissipation could do nothing that melancholy forever before me, ghastly and murdered. More than once the friends my made me threw reflections these which into agitation dread a dangerous relapse. Alas! Why did they preserve so fulfil might I that surely was it? life a detested and miserable my destiny, which is now drawing to a close. Soon, oh, very soon, the from me relieve and throbbings these extinguish death will mighty weight of anguish that bears me to the dust; and, in rest to sink also shall I, justice of award the executing. Then the appearance of death was distant, although the wish

Frankenstein

hours for sat often I and ;thoughts my to present ever was
motionless and speechless, wishing for some mighty revolution
.ruins its in destroyer my and me bury might that

The season of the assizes approached. I had already been three months
of danger continual in and weak still was I although and ,prison in
a relapse, I was obliged to travel nearly a hundred miles to the
himself charged Kirwin .Mr .held was court the where town country
with every care of collecting witnesses and arranging my defence.
,criminal a as publicly appearing of disgrace the spared was I
as the case was not brought before the court that decides on life and death.
the on was I that proved being its on ,bill the rejected jury grand The
Orkney Islands at the hour the body of my friend was found;
.prison from liberated was I removal my after fortnight a and

My father was enraptured on finding me freed from the vexations of
fresh the breathe to allowed again was I that ,charge criminal a
atmosphere and permitted to return to my native country. I did not
or dungeon a of walls the me to for ,feelings these in participate
a palace were alike hateful. The cup of life was poisoned forever,
gay and happy the upon as ,me upon shone sun the although and
of heart, I saw around me nothing but a dense and frightful darkness,
.me upon glared that eyes two of glimmer the but light no by penetrated
Sometimes they were the expressive eyes of Henry, languishing in death,
lashes black long the and lids the by covered nearly orbs dark the
that fringed them; sometimes it was the watery, clouded eyes of the monster,
.Ingolstadt at chamber my in them saw first I as

My father tried to awaken in me the feelings of affection. He talked
;Ernest and Elizabeth of ,visit soon should I which ,Geneva of
but these words only drew deep groans from me. Sometimes, indeed,
delight melancholy with thought and happiness for wish a felt I
of my beloved cousin or longed, with a devouring *maladie du pays*,
so been had that ,Rhone rapid and lake blue the more once see to
dear to me in early childhood; but my general state of feeling
the as residence a welcome as was prison a which in torpor a was
divinest scene in nature; and these fits were seldom interrupted
moments these At .despair and anguish of paroxysms by but
I often endeavoured to put an end to the existence I loathed,

restrain to vigilance and attendance unceasing required it and me from committing some dreadful act of violence.

Yet one duty remained to me, the recollection of which finally should I that necessary was It .despair selfish my over triumphed return without delay to Geneva, there to watch over the lives of ,murderer the for wait in lie to and loved fondly so I those that if any chance led me to the place of his concealment, with ,might I ,presence his by me blast to again dared he if or unflinching aim, put an end to the existence of the monstrous image .monstrous more still soul a of mockery the with endued had I which My father still desired to delay our departure, fearful that I could not --wreck shattered a was I for ,journey a of fatigues the sustain the shadow of a human being. My strength was gone. I was a .frame wasted my upon preyed day and night fever and ,skeleton mere Still, as I urged our leaving Ireland with such inquietude our took We .yield to best it thought father my ,impatience and passage on board a vessel bound for Havre-de-Grace and sailed with the on lay I .midnight was It .shores Irish the from wind fair a deck looking at the stars and listening to the dashing of the waves. pulse my and ,sight my from Ireland shut that darkness the hailed I beat with a feverish joy when I reflected that I should soon see Geneva. ;dream frightful a of light the in me to appeared past The yet the vessel in which I was, the wind that blew me from told me surrounded which sea the and ,Ireland of shore detested the me too forcibly that I was deceived by no vision and that Clerval, me to victim a fallen had ,companion dearest and friend my and the monster of my creation. I repassed, in my memory, my whole ,Geneva in family my with residing while happiness quiet --life the death of my mother, and my departure for Ingolstadt. to on me hurried that enthusiasm mad the ,shuddering ,remembered I the creation of my hideous enemy, and I called to mind the night in ;thought of train the pursue to unable was I .lived first he which a thousand feelings pressed upon me, and I wept bitterly. of custom the in been had I fever the from recovery my since Ever taking every night a small quantity of laudanum, for it was by rest the gain to enabled was I that only drug this of means necessary for the preservation of life. Oppressed by the my double swallowed now I ,misfortunes various my of recollection

Frankenstein

usual quantity and soon slept profoundly. But sleep did not afford
thousand a presented dreams my ;misery and thought from respite me
objects that scared me. Towards morning I was possessed by a kind
not could and neck my in grasp 'fiend the felt I ;nightmare of
free myself from it; groans and cries rang in my ears. My father,
;me awoke ,restlessness my perceiving ,me over watching was who
the dashing waves were around, the cloudy sky above, the fiend was
established was truce a that feeling a ,security of sense a :here not
between the present hour and the irresistible, disastrous future
mind human the which of ,forgetfulness calm of kind a me to imparted
is by its structure peculiarly susceptible.

Chapter 22

The voyage came to an end. We landed, and proceeded to Paris. I must I that and strength my overtaxed had I that found soon I repose before I could continue my journey. My father's care and my of origin the know not did he but ,indefatigable were attentions sufferings and sought erroneous methods to remedy the incurable ill. .man of face the abhorred I .society in amusement seek to me wished He Oh, not abhorred! They were my brethren, my fellow beings, ,them among repulsive most the to even attracted felt I and as to creatures of an angelic nature and celestial mechanism. .intercourse their share to right no had I that felt I But I had unchained an enemy among them whose joy it was to shed ,would they How .groans their in revel to and blood their each and all, abhor me and hunt me from the world did they know !me in source their had which crimes the and acts unhallowed my

My father yielded at length to my desire to avoid society and he Sometimes .despair my banish to arguments various by strove thought that I felt deeply the degradation of being obliged to the me to prove to endeavoured he and ,murder of charge a answer futility of pride.

"Alas! My father," said I, "how little do you know me. Human beings, wretch a such if degraded be indeed would ,passions and feelings their as I felt pride. Justine, poor unhappy Justine, was as innocent as I, cause the am I and ;it for died she ;charge same the suffered she and of this--I murdered her. William, Justine, and Henry--they all died ".hands my by

My father had often, during my imprisonment, heard me make the same desire to seemed sometimes he ,myself accused thus I when ;assertion an explanation, and at others he appeared to consider it as the offspring had kind this of idea some ,illness my during ,that and ,delirium of presented itself to my imagination, the remembrance of which I preserved .convalescence my in

Frankenstein

I avoided explanation and maintained a continual silence concerning
be should I that persuasion a had I .created had I wretch the
supposed mad, and this in itself would forever have chained my tongue.
which secret a disclose to myself bring not could I ,besides ,But
would fill my hearer with consternation and make fear and unnatural
impatient my ,therefore ,checked I .breast his of inmates the horror
thirst for sympathy and was silent when I would have given the world
those like words ,still ,Yet .secret fatal the confided have to
I have recorded would burst uncontrollably from me. I could offer
burden the relieved part in truth their but ,them of explanation no
of my mysterious woe.
of expression an with ,said father my occasion this Upon
unbounded wonder, "My dearest Victor, what infatuation is this?
".again assertion an such make to never you entreat I ,son dear My

"I am not mad," I cried energetically; "the sun and the heavens,
.truth my of witness bear can ,operations my viewed have who
I am the assassin of those most innocent victims; they died
my shed have I would times thousand A .machinations my by
own blood, drop by drop, to have saved their lives; but I
the sacrifice not could I indeed ,father my ,not could
whole human race."

The conclusion of this speech convinced my father that my ideas
our of subject the changed instantly he and ,deranged were
conversation and endeavoured to alter the course of my thoughts.
the of memory the obliterate to possible as much as wished He
scenes that had taken place in Ireland and never alluded to them
.misfortunes my of speak to me suffered or

As time passed away I became more calm; misery had her dwelling in
of manner incoherent same the in talked longer no I but ,heart my
my own crimes; sufficient for me was the consciousness of them.
of voice imperious the curbed I -self utmost the By
wretchedness, which sometimes desired to declare itself to the
they than composed more and calmer were manners my and ,world whole
had ever been since my journey to the sea of ice. A few days
the received I ,Switzerland to way our on Paris left we before
following letter from Elizabeth:

My dear Friend,

It gave me the greatest pleasure to receive a letter from my
,distance formidable a at longer no are you ;Paris at dated uncle
and I may hope to see you in less than a fortnight. My poor
you see to expect I !suffered have must you much how ,cousin
looking even more ill than when you quitted Geneva. This winter
anxious by been have I as tortured ,miserably most passed been has
suspense; yet I hope to see peace in your countenance and to find
.tranquillity and comfort of void totally not is heart your that

Yet I fear that the same feelings now exist that made you so
not would I .time by augmented perhaps even ,ago year a miserable
disturb you at this period, when so many misfortunes weigh upon
his to previous uncle my with had I that conversation a but ,you
departure renders some explanation necessary before we meet.
to have Elizabeth can What ,say possibly may You !Explanation
explain? If you really say this, my questions are answered and all
is it and ,me from distant are you But .satisfied doubts my
possible that you may dread and yet be pleased with this
,case the being this of probability a in and ;explanation
I dare not any longer postpone writing what, during your absence,
courage the had never have but you to express to wished often have I
to begin.

You well know, Victor, that our union had been the favourite
this told were We .infancy our since ever parents your of plan
when young, and taught to look forward to it as an event that would
during playfellows affectionate were We .place take certainly
childhood, and, I believe, dear and valued friends to one another
a entertain often sister and brother as But .older grew we as
lively affection towards each other without desiring a more
dearest ,me Tell ?case our be also such not may ,union intimate
Victor. Answer me, I conjure you by our mutual happiness, with
?another love not you --truth simple

Frankenstein

You have travelled; you have spent several years of your life you saw I when that ,friend my ,you to confess I and ;Ingolstadt at last autumn so unhappy, flying to solitude from the society of regret might you that supposing help not could I ,creature every our connection and believe yourself bound in honour to fulfil the your to themselves opposed they although ,parents your of wishes inclinations. But this is false reasoning. I confess to you, my you futurity of dreams airy my in that and you love I that ,friend have been my constant friend and companion. But it is your our that you to declare I when own my as well as desire I happiness marriage would render me eternally miserable unless it were the ,that think to weep I now Even .choice free own your of dictate borne down as you are by the cruellest misfortunes, you may stifle, which happiness and love that of hope all " ,honour" word the by would alone restore you to yourself. I, who have so miseries your increase may ,you for affection an disinterested tenfold by being an obstacle to your wishes. Ah! Victor, be for love a sincere too has playmate and cousin your that assured you not to be made miserable by this supposition. Be happy, my satisfied remain ,request one this in me obey you if and ;friend that nothing on earth will have the power to interrupt my .tranquillity

Do not let this letter disturb you; do not answer tomorrow, .pain you give will it if ,come you until even or ,day next the or My uncle will send me news of your health, and if I see but one other any or this by occasioned ,meet we when lips your on smile exertion of mine, I shall need no other happiness.

Elizabeth Lavenza

Geneva, May 18th, 17-

This letter revived in my memory what I had before forgotten, the -WEDDING YOUR ON YOU WITH BE WILL "--fiend the of threat Such was my sentence, and on that night would the daemon employ happiness of glimpse the from me tear and me destroy to art every which promised partly to console my sufferings. On that night

Frankenstein

.death my by crimes his consummate to determined had he
Well, be it so; a deadly struggle would then assuredly take place,
power his and peace at be should I victorious were he if which in
over me be at an end. If he were vanquished, I should be a free man.
family his when enjoys peasant the as Such ?freedom What !Alas
have been massacred before his eyes, his cottage burnt, his lands
,alone and ,penniless ,homeless ,adrift turned is he and ,waste laid
but free. Such would be my liberty except that in my Elizabeth
remorse of horrors those by balanced ,alas ,treasure a possessed I
and guilt which would pursue me until death.

Sweet and beloved Elizabeth! I read and reread her letter, and
whisper to dared and heart my into stole feelings softened some
paradisiacal dreams of love and joy; but the apple was already
I Yet .hope all from me drive to bared arm 'angel the and ,eaten
would die to make her happy. If the monster executed his threat,
marriage my whether considered I ,again ,yet ;inevitable was death
would hasten my fate. My destruction might indeed arrive a few
,it postponed I that suspect should torturer my if but ,sooner months
influenced by his menaces, he would surely find other and perhaps
.revenge of means dreadful more

He had vowed TO BE WITH ME ON MY WEDDING-NIGHT, yet he did not
,meantime the in peace to him binding as threat that consider
for as if to show me that he was not yet satiated with blood,
enunciation the after immediately Clerval murdered had he
of his threats. I resolved, therefore, that if my immediate
my or hers to either conduce would cousin my with union
father's happiness, my adversary's designs against my life
.hour single a it retard not should

In this state of mind I wrote to Elizabeth. My letter was calm and
happiness little" ,said I " ,girl beloved my ,fear I" .affectionate
remains for us on earth; yet all that I may one day enjoy is centred in you.
and life my consecrate I do alone you to ;fears idle your away Chase
my endeavours for contentment. I have one secret, Elizabeth, a dreadful one;
,then and ,horror with frame your chill will it ,you to revealed when
far from being surprised at my misery, you will only wonder that
misery of tale this confide will I .endured have I what survive I

Frankenstein

and terror to you the day after our marriage shall take place,
us between confidence perfect be must there ,cousin sweet my ,for
But until then, I conjure you, do not mention or allude to it.
".comply will you know I and ,entreat earnestly most I This

In about a week after the arrival of Elizabeth's letter we
,affection warm with me welcomed girl sweet The .Geneva to returned
yet tears were in her eyes as she beheld my emaciated frame and
thinner was She .also her in change a saw I .cheeks feverish
and had lost much of that heavenly vivacity that had before charmed me;
fit more a her made compassion of looks soft and gentleness her but
companion for one blasted and miserable as I was. The tranquillity
,it with madness brought Memory .endure not did enjoyed now I which
and when I thought of what had passed, a real insanity possessed me;
.despondent and low sometimes ,rage with burnt and furious was I sometimes
I neither spoke nor looked at anyone, but sat motionless, bewildered by
.me overcame that miseries of multitude the

Elizabeth alone had the power to draw me from these fits; her
and passion by transported when me soothe would voice gentle
inspire me with human feelings when sunk in torpor. She wept with
and remonstrate would she ,returned reason When .me for and me
endeavour to inspire me with resignation. Ah! It is well for the
.peace no is there guilty the for but ,resigned be to unfortunate
The agonies of remorse poison the luxury there is otherwise
my after Soon .grief of excess the indulging in found sometimes
arrival my father spoke of my immediate marriage with Elizabeth.
.silent remained I

"Have you, then, some other attachment?"

"None on earth. I love Elizabeth and look forward to our union
will I it on and ;fixed be therefore day the Let .delight with
consecrate myself, in life or death, to the happiness of my cousin."

"My dear Victor, do not speak thus. Heavy misfortunes have
and remains what to closer cling only us let but ,us befallen
transfer our love for those whom we have lost to those who yet
of ties the by close bound but small be will circle Our .live

affection and mutual misfortune. And when time shall have softened
replace to born be will care of objects dear and new ,despair your
those of whom we have been so cruelly deprived."

Such were the lessons of my father. But to me the remembrance of
the as omnipotent ,that wonder you can nor ;returned threat the
fiend had yet been in his deeds of blood, I should almost regard
words the pronounced had he when that and ,invincible as him
"I SHALL BE WITH YOU ON YOUR WEDDING-NIGHT," I should regard the
the if me to evil no was death But .unavoidable as fate threatened
loss of Elizabeth were balanced with it, and I therefore, with a
father my with agreed ,countenance cheerful even and contented
that if my cousin would consent, the ceremony should take place
.fate my to seal the ,imagined I as ,put thus and ,days ten in

Great God! If for one instant I had thought what might be the
have rather would I ,adversary fiendish my of intention hellish
banished myself forever from my native country and wandered a
this to consented have than earth the over outcast friendless
miserable marriage. But, as if possessed of magic powers,
I when and ;intentions real his to me blinded had monster the
thought that I had prepared only my own death, I hastened that
.victim dearer far a of

As the period fixed for our marriage drew nearer, whether from
.me within sink heart my felt I ,feeling prophetic a or cowardice
But I concealed my feelings by an appearance of hilarity that
hardly but ,father my of countenance the to joy and smiles brought
deceived the everwatchful and nicer eye of Elizabeth. She looked
a with unmingled not ,contentment placid with union our to forward
little fear, which past misfortunes had impressed, that what now
into dissipate soon might happiness tangible and certain appeared
an airy dream and leave no trace but deep and everlasting regret.
were visits congratulatory ,event the for made were Preparations
received, and all wore a smiling appearance. I shut up, as well as
entered and there preyed that anxiety the heart own my in ,could I
with seeming earnestness into the plans of my father, although they
'father my Through .tragedy my of decorations the as serve only might
exertions a part of the inheritance of Elizabeth had been restored

Frankenstein

shores the on possession small A .government Austrian the by her to of Como belonged to her. It was agreed that, immediately after our union, happiness of days first our spend and Lavenza Villa to proceed should we beside the beautiful lake near which it stood.

In the meantime I took every precaution to defend my person in case dagger a and pistols carried I .me attack openly should fiend the constantly about me and was ever on the watch to prevent artifice, .tranquillity of degree greater a gained means these by and Indeed, as the period approached, the threat appeared more as while ,peace my disturb to worthy as regarded be to not ,delusion a the happiness I hoped for in my marriage wore a greater appearance and nearer drew solemnization its for fixed day the as certainty of I heard it continually spoken of as an occurrence which no accident .prevent possibly could

Elizabeth seemed happy; my tranquil demeanour contributed greatly and wishes my fulfil to was that day the on But .mind her calm to my destiny, she was melancholy, and a presentiment of evil pervaded her; promised had I which secret dreadful the of thought she also perhaps and to reveal to her on the following day. My father was in the meantime melancholy the in recognized only preparation of bustle the in and overjoyed of his niece the diffidence of a bride.

After the ceremony was performed a large party assembled at my father's, ,water by journey our commence should I and Elizabeth that agreed was it but sleeping that night at Evian and continuing our voyage on the following day. .embarkation nuptial our on smiled all ;favourable wind the ,fair was day The

Those were the last moments of my life during which I enjoyed the ,hot was sun the ;along rapidly passed We .happiness of feeling but we were sheltered from its rays by a kind of canopy while we ,lake the of side one on sometimes ,scene the of beauty the enjoyed where we saw Mont Saleve, the pleasant banks of Montalegre, and at the and Blanc Mont beautiful the ,all surmounting ,distance a assemblage of snowy mountains that in vain endeavour to emulate her; opposing Jura mighty the saw we ,banks opposite the coasting sometimes its dark side to the ambition that would quit its native country, wish should who invader the to barrier insurmountable almost an and

to enslave it.

I took the hand of Elizabeth. "You are sorrowful, my love. Endure yet may I what and suffered have I what knew you If !Ah you would endeavour to let me taste the quiet and freedom from despair ".enjoy to me permits least at day one this that

"Be happy, my dear Victor," replied Elizabeth; "there is, I hope, not is joy lively a if that assured be and ;you distress to nothing painted in my face, my heart is contented. Something whispers to us before opened is that prospect the on much too depend to not me but I will not listen to such a sinister voice. Observe how fast and obscure sometimes which ,clouds the how and along move we sometimes rise above the dome of Mont Blanc, render this scene of fish innumerable the at also Look .interesting more still beauty that are swimming in the clear waters, where we can distinguish happy How !day divine a What .bottom the at lies that pebble every and serene all nature appears!"

Thus Elizabeth endeavoured to divert her thoughts and mine from all ;fluctuating was temper her But .subjects melancholy upon reflection joy for a few instants shone in her eyes, but it continually gave place .reverie and distraction to

The sun sank lower in the heavens; we passed the river Drance and of glens the and higher the of chasms the through path its observed the lower hills. The Alps here come closer to the lake, and we eastern its forms which mountains of amphitheatre the approached boundary. The spire of Evian shone under the woods that surrounded .overhung was it which by mountain above mountain of range the and it

The wind, which had hitherto carried us along with amazing rapidity, water the ruffled just air soft the ;breeze light a to sunset at sank and caused a pleasant motion among the trees as we approached the shore, .hay and flowers of scent delightful most the wafted it which from The sun sank beneath the horizon as we landed, and as I touched were soon which revive fears and cares those felt I shore the to clasp me and cling to me forever.

Chapter 23

It was eight o'clock when we landed; we walked for a short time on
inn the to retired then and ,light transitory the enjoying ,shore the
and contemplated the lovely scene of waters, woods, and mountains,
.outlines black their displaying still yet ,darkness in obscured

The wind, which had fallen in the south, now rose with great
the in summit her reached had moon The .west the in violence
heavens and was beginning to descend; the clouds swept across it
while ,rays her dimmed and vulture the of flight the than swifter
the lake reflected the scene of the busy heavens, rendered still
.rise to beginning were that waves restless the by busier
Suddenly a heavy storm of rain descended.

I had been calm during the day, but so soon as night obscured
.mind my in arose fears thousand a ,objects of shapes the
I was anxious and watchful, while my right hand grasped a pistol
resolved I but ,me terrified sound every ;bosom my in hidden was which
that I would sell my life dearly and not shrink from the conflict
.extinguished was adversary my of that or life own my until
Elizabeth observed my agitation for some time in timid and
which glance my in something was there but ,silence fearful
communicated terror to her, and trembling, she asked, "What is it
"?fear you it is What ?Victor dear my ,you agitates that

"Oh! Peace, peace, my love," replied I; "this night, and all will
".dreadful very ,dreadful is night this but ;safe be

I passed an hour in this state of mind, when suddenly I reflected how
,wife my to be would expected momentarily I which combat the fearful
and I earnestly entreated her to retire, resolving not to join her
.enemy my of situation the to as knowledge some obtained had I until

She left me, and I continued some time walking up and down the
afford might that corner every inspecting and house the of passages
a retreat to my adversary. But I discovered no trace of him and
had chance fortunate some that conjecture to beginning was

Frankenstein

intervened to prevent the execution of his menaces when suddenly I
into room the from came It .scream dreadful and shrill a heard
which Elizabeth had retired. As I heard it, the whole truth rushed
fibre and muscle every of motion the ,dropped arms my ,mind my into
was suspended; I could feel the blood trickling in my veins and
for but lasted state This .limbs my of extremities the in tingling
an instant; the scream was repeated, and I rushed into the room.
the relate to here I am Why !expire then not I did Why !God Great
destruction of the best hope and the purest creature on earth?
,bed the across thrown ,inanimate and lifeless ,there was She
her head hanging down and her pale and distorted features half
--figure same the see I turn I Everywhere .hair her by covered
her bloodless arms and relaxed form flung by the murderer on its bridal bier.
clings and obstinate is Life !Alas ?live and this behold I Could
closest where it is most hated. For a moment only did I lose recollection;
.ground the on senseless fell I

When I recovered I found myself surrounded by the people of the inn;
horror the but ,terror breathless a expressed countenances their
of others appeared only as a mockery, a shadow of the feelings
lay where room the to them from escaped I .me oppressed that
the body of Elizabeth, my love, my wife, so lately living, so
which in posture the from moved been had She .worthy so ,dear
I had first beheld her, and now, as she lay, her head upon her arm
might I ,neck and face her across thrown handkerchief a and
have supposed her asleep. I rushed towards her and embraced her
told limbs the of coldness and languor deadly the but ,ardour with
me that what I now held in my arms had ceased to be the Elizabeth
'fiend the of mark murderous The .cherished and loved had I whom
grasp was on her neck, and the breath had ceased to issue from her lips.
.up look to happened I ,despair of agony the in her over hung still I While
The windows of the room had before been darkened, and I felt a kind of panic
.chamber the illuminate moon the of light yellow pale the seeing on
The shutters had been thrown back, and with a sensation of horror
hideous most the figure a window open the at saw I ,described be to not
and abhorred. A grin was on the face of the monster; he seemed to jeer,
.wife my of corpse the towards pointed he finger fiendish his with as
I rushed towards the window, and drawing a pistol from my bosom,
with running and ,station his from leaped ,me eluded he but ;fired

the swiftness of lightning, plunged into the lake.

The report of the pistol brought a crowd into the room. I pointed track the followed we and ,disappeared had he where spot the to with boats; nets were cast, but in vain. After passing several hours, been have to it believing companions my of most ,hopeless returned we a form conjured up by my fancy. After having landed, they proceeded among directions different in going parties ,country the search to the woods and vines.

I attempted to accompany them and proceeded a short distance from of those like were steps my ,round whirled head my but ,house the a drunken man, I fell at last in a state of utter exhaustion; heat the with parched was skin my and ,eyes my covered film a of fever. In this state I was carried back and placed on a bed, round wandered eyes my ;happened had what of conscious hardly the room as if to seek something that I had lost.

After an interval I arose, and as if by instinct, crawled into the room ;around weeping women were There .lay beloved my of corpse the where I hung over it and joined my sad tears to theirs; all this time no rambled thoughts my but ,mind my to itself presented idea distinct to various subjects, reflecting confusedly on my misfortunes and their cause. ,William of death The .horror and wonder of cloud a in ,bewildered was I the execution of Justine, the murder of Clerval, and lastly of my wife; safe were friends remaining only my that not knew I moment that at even from the malignity of the fiend; my father even now might be writhing me made idea This .feet his at dead be might Ernest and ,grasp his under shudder and recalled me to action. I started up and resolved to return .speed possible all with Geneva to

There were no horses to be procured, and I must return by the lake; .torrents in fell rain the and ,unfavourable was wind the but However, it was hardly morning, and I might reasonably hope to ,myself oar an took and row to men hired I .night by arrive for I had always experienced relief from mental torment in bodily exercise. that agitation of excess the and ,felt now I misery overflowing the But I endured rendered me incapable of any exertion. I threw down the oar, .arose that idea gloomy every to way gave ,hands my upon head my leaning and

Frankenstein

If I looked up, I saw scenes which were familiar to me in my happier time
her of company the in before day the but contemplated had I which and
who was now but a shadow and a recollection. Tears streamed from my eyes.
waters the in play fish the saw I and ,moment a for ceased had rain The
as they had done a few hours before; they had then been observed by Elizabeth.
.change sudden and great a as mind human the to painful so is Nothing
The sun might shine or the clouds might lower, but nothing could appear
every me from snatched had fiend A .before day the done had it as me to
hope of future happiness; no creature had ever been so miserable as I was;
dwell I should why But .man of history the in single is event an frightful so
upon the incidents that followed this last overwhelming event?
,acme their reached have I ;horrors of tale a been has Mine
and what I must now relate can but be tedious to you. Know that,
.desolate left was I ;away snatched were friends my ,one by one
My own strength is exhausted, and I must tell, in a few words,
.Geneva at arrived I .narration hideous my of remains what
My father and Ernest yet lived, but the former sunk under
!man old venerable and excellent ,now him see I .bore I that tidings the
His eyes wandered in vacancy, for they had lost their charm and
doted he whom ,daughter than more his ,Elizabeth --delight their
on with all that affection which a man feels, who in the decline of life,
.remain that those to earnestly more clings ,affections few having
Cursed, cursed be the fiend that brought misery on his grey hairs
under live not could He !wretchedness in waste to him doomed and
the horrors that were accumulated around him; the springs of
,bed his from rise to unable was he ;way gave suddenly existence
and in a few days he died in my arms.

What then became of me? I know not; I lost sensation, and chains
.me upon pressed that objects only the were darkness and
Sometimes, indeed, I dreamt that I wandered in flowery meadows and
found and awoke I but ,youth my of friends the with vales pleasant
myself in a dungeon. Melancholy followed, but by degrees I gained
then was and situation and miseries my of conception clear a
released from my prison. For they had called me mad, and during
.habitation my been had cell solitary a ,understood I as ,months many

Liberty, however, had been a useless gift to me, had I not, as I
the As .revenge to awakened time same the at ,reason to awakened

Frankenstein

memory of past misfortunes pressed upon me, I began to reflect on the miserable creature I had created whom I had sent abroad into the world for my destruction. I was desired and I thought I when rage maddening a by possessed and ardently prayed that I might have him within my grasp to wreak my head-cursed his on revenge signal and great a

Nor did my hate long confine itself to useless wishes; I began to purpose this for and I securing of means best the on reflect about a month after my release, I repaired to a criminal judge in whom I knew I that I made to accusation and had I that he told and told me the destroyer of my family, and that I required him to exert his magistrate The murderer the of apprehension the for authority whole listened to me with attention and kindness.

"Be assured, sir," said he, "no pains or exertions on my part shall be spared to discover the villain."

"I thank you," replied I; "listen, therefore, to the deposition which I should I that strange so tale a indeed is It I make to have I that fear you would not credit it were there not something in truth which, connected too is story The conviction forces, wonderful however to be mistaken for a dream, and I have no motive for falsehood." My calm but impressive manner was thus addressed I as My I had formed in my own heart a resolution to pursue my destroyer to death, my life to me reconciled interval and for and agony my quieted purpose this and I now related my history briefly but with firmness and precision, investing it into deviating never and accuracy with dates the marking or exclamation.

I as but I, incredulous perfectly first at appeared magistrate The continued he became more attentive and interested; I saw him, surprise lively a others at; horror with shudder sometimes unmingled with disbelief, was painted on his countenance. whom being the is This" ,said I narration my concluded had I When I accuse and for whose seizure and punishment I call upon you to I and ,magistrate a as duty your is It .power whole your exert believe and hope that your feelings as a man will not revolt from address This ".occasion this on functions those of execution the caused a considerable change in the physiognomy of my own auditor.

given is that belief of kind half that with story my heard had He to a tale of spirits and supernatural events; but when he was his of tide whole the ,consequence in officially act to upon called incredulity returned. He, however, answered mildly, "I would of creature the but ,pursuit your in aid every you afford willingly whom you speak appears to have powers which would put all my traverse can which animal an follow can Who .defiance to exertions the sea of ice and inhabit caves and dens where no man would the since elapsed have months some ,Besides ?intrude to venture commission of his crimes, and no one can conjecture to what place ".inhabit now may he region what or wandered has he

"I do not doubt that he hovers near the spot which I inhabit, hunted be may he ,Alps the in refuge taken indeed has he if and like the chamois and destroyed as a beast of prey. But I perceive intend not do and narrative my credit not do you ;thoughts your to pursue my enemy with the punishment which is his desert." .intimidated was magistrate the ;eyes my in sparkled rage ,spoke I As "You are mistaken," said he. "I will exert myself, and if it is in suffer shall he that assured be ,monster the seize to power my punishment proportionate to his crimes. But I fear, from what you prove will this that ,properties his be to described yourself have impracticable; and thus, while every proper measure is pursued, ".disappointment to mind your up make should you

"That cannot be; but all that I can say will be of little avail. ,vice a be to it allow I while ,yet ;you to moment no of is revenge My I confess that it is the devouring and only passion of my soul. ,murderer the that reflect I when unspeakable is rage My whom I have turned loose upon society, still exists. ,resource one but have I ;demand just my refuse You and I devote myself, either in my life or death, to his destruction."

I trembled with excess of agitation as I said this; there was a haughty that of ,not doubt I ,something and ,manner my in frenzy fierceness which the martyrs of old are said to have possessed. other far by occupied was mind whose ,magistrate Genevan a to But ideas than those of devotion and heroism, this elevation of mind as me soothe to endeavoured He .madness of appearance the much had

Frankenstein

a nurse does a child and reverted to my tale as the effects of delirium.

"Man," I cried, "how ignorant art thou in thy pride of wisdom!

".say you is it what not know you ;Cease

I broke from the house angry and disturbed and retired to meditate

.action of mode other some on

Chapter 24

My present situation was one in which all voluntary thought was alone revenge; fury by away hurried was I .lost and up swallowed endowed me with strength and composure; it moulded my feelings and otherwise when periods at calm and calculating be to me allowed delirium or death would have been my portion.

My first resolution was to quit Geneva forever; my country, which, ,adversity my in ,now ,me to dear was ,beloved and happy was I when became hateful. I provided myself with a sum of money, together .departed and ,mother my to belonged had which jewels few a with And now my wanderings began which are to cease but with life. all endured have and earth the of portion vast a traversed have I the hardships which travellers in deserts and barbarous countries have times many ;know hardly I lived have I How .meet to wont are I stretched my failing limbs upon the sandy plain and prayed for death. .being in adversary my leave and die not dared I ;alive me kept revenge But

When I quitted Geneva my first labour was to gain some clue by plan my But .enemy fiendish my of steps the trace might I which was unsettled, and I wandered many hours round the confines of the I approached night As .pursue should I path what uncertain ,town found myself at the entrance of the cemetery where William, the approached and it entered I .reposed father my and ,Elizabeth tomb which marked their graves. Everything was silent except the the ;wind the by agitated gently were which ,trees the of leaves night was nearly dark, and the scene would have been solemn and the of spirits The .observer uninterested an to even affecting departed seemed to flit around and to cast a shadow, which was felt .mourner the of head the around ,seen not but

The deep grief which this scene had at first excited quickly gave murderer their ;lived I and ,dead were They .despair and rage to way also lived, and to destroy him I must drag out my weary existence. lips quivering with and earth the kissed and grass the on knelt I exclaimed, "By the sacred earth on which I kneel, by the shades ,feel I that grief eternal and deep the by ,me near wander that

Frankenstein

I swear; and by thee, O Night, and the spirits that preside over thee, perish shall I or he until misery this caused who daemon the pursue to in mortal conflict. For this purpose I will preserve my life; the tread and sun the behold again I will revenge dear this execute to green herbage of earth, which otherwise should vanish from my eyes forever. ministers wandering ,you on and ,dead the of spirits ,you on call I And of vengeance, to aid and conduct me in my work. Let the cursed and that despair the feel him let ;agony of deep drink monster hellish now torments me." I had begun my adjuration with solemnity murdered my of shades the that me assured almost which awe an and friends heard and approved my devotion, but the furies possessed me .utterance my choked rage and ,concluded I as

I was answered through the stillness of night by a loud and the ;heavily and long ears my on rang It .laugh fiendish mountains re-echoed it, and I felt as if all hell surrounded me have should I moment that in Surely .laughter and mockery with been possessed by frenzy and have destroyed my miserable existence .vengeance for reserved was I that and heard was vow my that but The laughter died away, when a well-known and abhorred voice, ,whisper audible an in me addressed ,ear my to close apparently "I am satisfied, miserable wretch! You have determined to live, ".satisfied am I and

I darted towards the spot from which the sound proceeded, but the arose moon the of disk broad the Suddenly .grasp my eluded devil and shone full upon his ghastly and distorted shape as he fled with .speed mortal than more

I pursued him, and for many months this has been my task. Guided .vainly but ,Rhone the of windings the followed I ,clue slight a by The blue Mediterranean appeared, and by a strange chance, I saw the the for bound vessel a in himself hide and night by enter fiend Black Sea. I took my passage in the same ship, but he escaped, .how not know I

Amidst the wilds of Tartary and Russia, although he still evaded me, scared ,peasants the Sometimes .track his in followed ever have I by this horrid apparition, informed me of his path; sometimes he himself,

Frankenstein

,die and despair should I him of trace all lost I if that feared who
left some mark to guide me. The snows descended on my head,
,plain white the on step huge his of print the saw I and
To you first entering on life, to whom care is new and agony unknown,
,want ,Cold ?feel still and felt have I what understand you can how
and fatigue were the least pains which I was destined to endure;
;hell eternal my me with about carried and devil some by cursed was I
yet still a spirit of good followed and directed my steps and when
insurmountable seemingly from me extricate suddenly would murmured most I
difficulties. Sometimes, when nature, overcome by hunger, sank under
that desert the in me for prepared was repast a ,exhaustion the
restored and inspirited me. The fare was, indeed, coarse, such as
was it that doubt not will I but ,ate country the of peasants the
set there by the spirits that I had invoked to aid me. Often, when
,thirst by parched was I and ,cloudless heavens the ,dry was all
a slight cloud would bedim the sky, shed the few drops that
.vanish and ,me revived

I followed, when I could, the courses of the rivers; but the daemon
the of population the that here was it as ,these avoided generally
country chiefly collected. In other places human beings were
that animals wild the on subsisted generally I and ,seen seldom
crossed my path. I had money with me and gained the friendship of
food some me with brought I or ;it distributing by villagers the
that I had killed, which, after taking a small part, I always presented
.cooking for utensils and fire with me provided had who those to

My life, as it passed thus, was indeed hateful to me, and it was
!sleep blessed O .joy taste could I that alone sleep during
Often, when most miserable, I sank to repose, and my dreams lulled
these provided had me guarded that spirits The .rapture to even me
moments, or rather hours, of happiness that I might retain strength
have should I ,respite this of Deprived .pilgrimage my fulfil to
sunk under my hardships. During the day I was sustained and inspirited
,wife my ,friends my saw I sleep in for ,night of hope the by
and my beloved country; again I saw the benevolent countenance of my father,
Clerval beheld and ,voice 'Elizabeth my of tones silver the heard
enjoying health and youth. Often, when wearied by a toilsome march,
come should night until dreaming was I that myself persuaded I

and that I should then enjoy reality in the arms of my dearest friends. their to cling I did How !them for feel I did fondness agonizing What dear forms, as sometimes they haunted even my waking hours, and persuade burned that ,vengeance moments such At !lived still they that myself within me, died in my heart, and I pursued my path towards the destruction mechanical the as ,heaven by enjoined task a as more daemon the of impulse of some power of which I was unconscious, than as the ardent .know cannot I pursued I whom were feelings his What .soul my of desire Sometimes, indeed, he left marks in writing on the barks of the trees not is reign My" .fury my instigated and me guided that stone in cut or yet over"--these words were legible in one of these inscriptions-- everlasting the seek I ;me Follow .complete is power my and ,live you" ices of the north, where you will feel the misery of cold and frost, follow you if ,place this near find will You .impassive am I which to not too tardily, a dead hare; eat and be refreshed. Come on, my enemy; hours miserable and hard many but ,lives our for wrestle to yet have we must you endure until that period shall arrive."

Scoffing devil! Again do I vow vengeance; again do I devote thee, my up give I will Never .death and torture to ,fiend miserable search until he or I perish; and then with what ecstasy shall I prepare now even who ,friends departed my and Elizabeth my join for me the reward of my tedious toil and horrible pilgrimage!

As I still pursued my journey to the northward, the snows thickened .support to severe too almost degree a in increased cold the and The peasants were shut up in their hovels, and only a few of starvation whom animals the seize to forth ventured hardy most the had forced from their hiding-places to seek for prey. ;procured be could fish no and ,ice with covered were rivers The and thus I was cut off from my chief article of maintenance. .labours my of difficulty the with increased enemy my of triumph The One inscription that he left was in these words: "Prepare! Your toils enter soon shall we for ,food provide and furs in yourself wrap ;begin only upon a journey where your sufferings will satisfy my everlasting hatred."

My courage and perseverance were invigorated by these scoffing words; ,me support to heaven on calling and ,purpose my in fail to not resolved I I continued with unabated fervour to traverse immense deserts, until the ocean

.horizon the of boundary utmost the formed and distance a at appeared
Oh! How unlike it was to the blue seasons of the south! Covered with ice,
wildness superior its by land from distinguished be to only was it
and ruggedness. The Greeks wept for joy when they beheld the
rapture with hailed and ,Asia of hills the from Mediterranean
the boundary of their toils. I did not weep, but I knelt down
me conducting for spirit guiding my thanked heart full a with and
in safety to the place where I hoped, notwithstanding my adversary's gibe,
.him with grapple and meet to

Some weeks before this period I had procured a sledge and dogs
not know I .speed inconceivable with snows the traversed thus and
whether the fiend possessed the same advantages, but I found that,
.him on gained now I ,pursuit the in ground lost daily had I before as
so much so that when I first saw the ocean he was but one day's journey
.beach the reach should he before him intercept to hoped I and ,advance in
With new courage, therefore, I pressed on, and in two days arrived at
inhabitants the of inquired I .seashore the on hamlet wretched a
concerning the fiend and gained accurate information. A gigantic monster,
.pistols many and gun a with armed ,before night the arrived had ,said they
putting to flight the inhabitants of a solitary cottage through fear
.food winter of store their off carried had He .appearance terrific his of
and placing it in a sledge, to draw which he had seized on a numerous drove
joy the to ,night same the and ,them harnessed had he ,dogs trained of
of the horror-struck villagers, had pursued his journey across the sea
must he that conjectured they and ;land no to led that direction a in
speedily be destroyed by the breaking of the ice or frozen by
.frosts eternal the

On hearing this information I suffered a temporary access of despair.
almost and destructive a commence must I and ,me escaped had He
endless journey across the mountainous ices of the ocean,
.I which and endure long could inhabitants the of few that cold amidst
the native of a genial and sunny climate, could not hope to survive.
rage my ,triumphant be and live should fiend the that idea the at Yet
and vengeance returned, and like a mighty tide, overwhelmed every other
dead the of spirits the which during ,repose slight a After .feeling
hovered round and instigated me to toil and revenge, I prepared for my journey.
the of inequalities the for fashioned one for -land my exchanged I

frozen ocean, and purchasing a plentiful stock of provisions,
land from departed I

I cannot guess how many days have passed since then, but I have
just a of sentiment eternal the but nothing which misery endured
retribution burning within my heart could have enabled me to support.
passage my up barred often ice of mountains rugged and Immense
and I often heard the thunder of the ground sea, which threatened
paths the made and came frost the again But .destruction my
of the sea secure.

By the quantity of provision which I had consumed, I should guess
continual the and ;journey this in weeks three passed had I that
protraction of hope, returning back upon the heart, often wrung
had Despair .eyes my from grief and despondency of drops bitter
indeed almost secured her prey, and I should soon have sunk beneath
had me conveyed that animals poor the after ,Once .misery this
with incredible toil gained the summit of a sloping ice mountain,
expanse the viewed I ,died ,fatigue his under sinking ,one and
before me with anguish, when suddenly my eye caught a dark speck
it what discover to sight my strained I .plain dusky the upon
could be and uttered a wild cry of ecstasy when I distinguished
.within form -well a of proportions distorted the and sledge a
Oh! With what a burning gush did hope revisit my heart! Warm tears
intercept not might they that ,away wiped hastily I which ,eyes my filled
the view I had of the daemon; but still my sight was dimmed by the burning
.aloud wept I ,me oppressed that emotions the to way giving ,until ,drops

But this was not the time for delay; I disencumbered the dogs o
,food of portion plentiful a them gave ,companion dead their f
and after an hour's rest, which was absolutely necessary, and yet
sledge The .route my continued I ,me to irksome bitterly was which
was still visible, nor did I again lose sight of it except at the
its with it concealed -ice some time short a for when moments
intervening crags. I indeed perceptibly gained on it, and when,
than more no at enemy my beheld I ,journey 'days two nearly after
a mile distant, my heart bounded within me.

But now, when I appeared almost within grasp of my foe, my hopes

Frankenstein

more him of trace all lost I and ,extinguished suddenly were utterly than I had ever done before. A ground sea was heard; swelled and rolled waters the as ,progress its of thunder the beneath me, became every moment more ominous and terrific. as ,and ;roared sea the ;arose wind The .vain in but ,on pressed I with the mighty shock of an earthquake, it split and cracked with ;finished soon was work The .sound overwhelming and tremendous a in a few minutes a tumultuous sea rolled between me and my enemy, was that ice of piece scattered a on drifting left was I and continually lessening and thus preparing for me a hideous death. ,died dogs my of several ;passed hours appalling many manner this In and I myself was about to sink under the accumulation of distress me to forth holding and anchor at riding vessel your saw I when hopes of succour and life. I had no conception that vessels quickly I .sight the at astounded was and north far so came ever destroyed part of my sledge to construct oars, and by these means the in raft ice my move to ,fatigue infinite with ,enabled was direction of your ship. I had determined, if you were going rather seas the of mercy the to myself trust to still ,southwards than abandon my purpose. I hoped to induce you to grant me a boat .northwards was direction your But .enemy my pursue could I which with You took me on board when my vigour was exhausted, and I should soon ,dread still I which death a into hardships multiplied my under sunk have for my task is unfulfilled.

Oh! When will my guiding spirit, in conducting me to the daemon, ?live yet he and ,die I must or ;desire much so I rest the me allow If I do, swear to me, Walton, that he shall not escape, that you dare I do And .death his in vengeance my satisfy and him seek will to ask of you to undertake my pilgrimage, to endure the hardships ,dead am I when ,Yet .selfish so not am I ;No ?undergone have I that if he should appear, if the ministers of vengeance should conduct him triumph not shall he that --live not shall he that swear ,you to over my accumulated woes and survive to add to the list of his dark crimes. ;heart my over power even had words his once and ,persuasive and eloquent is He but trust him not. His soul is as hellish as his form, full of treachery ,Justine ,William of names the on call ;not him Hear .malice fiendlike and Clerval, Elizabeth, my father, and of the wretched Victor, and thrust .aright steel the direct and near hover will I .heart his into sword your

Walton, in continuation.

August 26th, 17-

You have read this strange and terrific story, Margaret; and do you now even which that like, horror with congeal blood your feel not curdles mine? Sometimes, seized with sudden agony, he could not, piercing yet, broken voice his, others at; tale his continue uttered with difficulty the words so replete with anguish. Indignation with up lighted now were eyes lovely and fine His now subdued to downcast sorrow and quenched in infinite wretchedness. related and tones and countenance his commanded he Sometimes the most horrible incidents with a tranquil voice, suppressing every would face his, forth bursting volcano a like, then; agitation of mark suddenly change to an expression of the wildest rage as he shrieked out, persecutor his on imprecations His tale is connected and told with an appearance of the simplest truth, me showed he which, Safie and Felix of letters the that you to own I yet and the apparition of the monster seen from our ship, brought to me a greater, asseverations his than narrative his of truth the of conviction however earnest and connected. Such a monster has, then, really existence! I Sometimes admiration and surprise in lost am I yet, it doubt cannot I endeavoured to gain from Frankenstein the particulars of his creature's "friend my, mad you Are" impenetrable was he point this on but, formation said he. "Or whither does your senseless curiosity lead you? Would you! peace, Peace? enemy demoniacal a world the and yourself for create also Learn my miseries and do not seek to increase your own." Frankenstein them see to asked he; history his concerning notes made I that discovered and then himself corrected and augmented them in many places, conversations the to spirit and life the giving in principally but he held with his enemy. "Since you have preserved my narration," "posterity to down go should one mutilated a that not would I" he said

Thus has a week passed away, while I have listened to the strangest feeling every and thoughts My formed imagination ever that tale of my soul have been drunk up by the interest for my guest which this tale

him soothe to wish I created have manners gentle and elevated own his and yet can I counsel one so infinitely miserable, so destitute of every hope will know now can he that joy only The !no ,Oh ?live to ,consolation of be when he composes his shattered spirit to peace and death. Yet he enjoys when that believes he ;delirium and solitude of offspring the ,comfort one in dreams he holds converse with his friends and derives from that communion are they that ,vengeance his to excitements or miseries his for consolation not the creations of his fancy, but the beings themselves who visit him from reveries his to solemnity a gives faith This .world remote a of regions the that render them to me almost as imposing and interesting as truth.

Our conversations are not always confined to his own history and misfortunes. knowledge unbounded displays he literature general of point every On and a quick and piercing apprehension. His eloquence is forcible and touching; move to endeavours or incident pathetic a relates he when ,him hear I can nor the passions of pity or love, without tears. What a glorious creature must godlike and noble thus is he when ,prosperity his of days the in been have he in ruin! He seems to feel his own worth and the greatness of his fall.

"When younger," said he, "I believed myself destined for some possessed I but ,profound are feelings My .enterprise great a coolness of judgment that fitted me for illustrious achievements. others when me supported nature my of worth the of sentiment This would have been oppressed, for I deemed it criminal to throw away fellow my to useful be might that talents those grief useless in creatures. When I reflected on the work I had completed, no less could I ,animal rational and sensitive a of creation the than one a not rank myself with the herd of common projectors. But this thought, only serves now ,career my of commencement the in me supported which to plunge me lower in the dust. All my speculations and hopes are ,omnipotence to aspired who archangel the like and ,nothing as I am chained in an eternal hell. My imagination was vivid, ;intense were application and analysis of powers my yet by the union of these qualities I conceived the idea and executed passion without recollect cannot I now Even .man a of creation the my reveries while the work was incomplete. I trod heaven in my thoughts, .effects their of idea the with burning now ,powers my in exulting now From my infancy I was imbued with high hopes and a lofty ambition; ,was once I as me known had you if ,friend My !Oh !sunk I am how but

Frankenstein

you would not recognize me in this state of degradation. Despondency
fell I until, on me bear to seemed destiny high a; heart my visited rarely
never, never again to rise." Must I then lose this admirable being?
sympathize would who one sought have I; friend a for longed have I
with and love me. Behold, on these desert seas I have found such a one,
.him lose and value his know to only him gained have I fear I but
I would reconcile him to life, but he repulses the idea.

"I thank you, Walton," he said, "for your kind intentions towards
fresh and ties new of speak you when but; wretch a miserable so
affections, think you that any can replace those who are gone?
?Elizabeth another woman any or, was Clerval as me to be man any Can
Even where the affections are not strongly moved by any superior
certain a possess always childhood our of companions the, excellence
power over our minds which hardly any later friend can obtain.
may they however, which, dispositions infantine our know They
be afterwards modified, are never eradicated; and they can judge
integrity the to as conclusions certain more with actions our of
of our motives. A sister or a brother can never, unless indeed
fraud of other the suspect, early shown been have symptoms such
or false dealing, when another friend, however strongly he may
.suspicion with contemplated be, himself of spite in, may, attached be
But I enjoyed friends, dear not only through habit and association,
voice soothing the, am I wherever and; merits own their from but
of my Elizabeth and the conversation of Clerval will be ever whispered
solitude a such in feeling one but and, dead are They. ear my in
can persuade me to preserve my life. If I were engaged in any high
fellow my to utility extensive with fraught, design or undertaking
creatures, then could I live to fulfil it. But such is not my destiny;
;existence gave I whom to being the destroy and pursue must I
then my lot on earth will be fulfilled and I may die."

My beloved Sister,

September 2nd

I write to you, encompassed by peril and ignorant whether I am ever
.it inhabit that friends dearer the and England dear again see to doomed
I am surrounded by mountains of ice which admit of no escape and threaten

Frankenstein

persuaded have I whom fellows brave The .vessel my crush to moment every
to be my companions look towards me for aid, but I have none to bestow.
courage my yet ,situation our in appalling terribly something is There
and hopes do not desert me. Yet it is terrible to reflect that the lives
schemes mad my ,lost are we If .me through endangered are men these all of
are the cause.

And what, Margaret, will be the state of your mind? You will not
.return my await anxiously will you and ,destruction my of hear
Years will pass, and you will have visitings of despair and yet be
of failing sickening the ,sister beloved My !Oh .hope by tortured
your heart-felt expectations is, in prospect, more terrible to me
.death own my than

But you have a husband and lovely children; you may be happy.
!so you make and you bless Heaven

My unfortunate guest regards me with the tenderest compassion.
a were life if as talks and hope with me fill to endeavours He
possession which he valued. He reminds me how often the same
,sea this attempted have who navigators other to happened have accidents
and in spite of myself, he fills me with cheerful auguries.
,speaks he when ;eloquence his of power the feel sailors the Even
they no longer despair; he rouses their energies, and while they
-mole are ice of mountains vast these believe they voice his hear
hills which will vanish before the resolutions of man. These
them fills delayed expectation of day each ;transitory are feelings
with fear, and I almost dread a mutiny caused by this despair.

September 5th

A scene has just passed of such uncommon interest that,
,you reach never may papers these that probable highly is it although
yet I cannot forbear recording it.

Frankenstein

We are still surrounded by mountains of ice, still in imminent danger, and many of my unfortunate comrades have already found a grave. The conflict of their crushed being is cold and excessive. Daily has declined Frankenstein amidst this desolation of scene; a feverish fire still glimmers in his eyes, but he is in health; he is speedily roused when any exertion is suddenly made, and sinks again into apparent lifelessness.

I mentioned in my last letter the fears I entertained of a mutiny. This morning I sat watching my friend as he lay on his back, his eyes half closed and his limbs hanging listlessly. I demanded admission into the cabin, and a half-dozen sailors entered, and their leader addressed me. He told me that he and his companions had been chosen by the other sailors to come in deputation to me to make me a requisition which, I could not refuse. We were immured in ice and probably never escape, but they feared that if, as was possible, I should be opened a free passage and dissipate the ice, they might be rash enough to continue my voyage and lead them into fresh dangers. They insisted that I should engage with a solemn promise that if the vessel were freed by my direct course southwards, I should instantly be free.

This speech troubled me. I had not despaired, nor had I yet conceived the idea of returning free, or even in possibility, to justice, or even to life. I refused this demand? I hesitated before I answered Frankenstein when he first appeared, and indeed hardly to have force enough to attend to his sparkling eyes and flushed cheeks with momentary vigour. Turning towards the men, he said, "What do you mean? Are you then so easily turned from your design? Did you not call this a glorious expedition?"

"And wherefore was it glorious? Not because the way was smooth and dangers full, but because as placid as a southern sea, because at every new incident your fortitude was to be tried, and death and danger because your courage was exhibited and called forth, and these you were to brave and overcome. For this

Frankenstein

.undertaking honourable an it was this for ,glorious a it was
You were hereafter to be hailed as the benefactors of your species,
death encountered who men brave to belonging as adored names your
for honour and the benefit of mankind. And now, behold, with the
and mighty first the ,will you if ,or ,danger of imagination first
terrific trial of your courage, you shrink away and are content to
cold endure to enough strength not had who men as down handed be
and peril; and so, poor souls, they were chilly and returned to
;preparation this not requires that ,Why .firesides warm their
ye need not have come thus far and dragged your captain to the
,men Be !Oh .cowards yourselves prove to merely defeat a of shame
or be more than men. Be steady to your purposes and firm as a
it ;be may hearts your as stuff such of made not is ice This .rock
is mutable and cannot withstand you if you say that it shall not.
marked disgrace of stigma the with families your to return not Do
on your brows. Return as heroes who have fought and conquered and
spoke He ".foe the on backs their turn to is it what not know who
this with a voice so modulated to the different feelings expressed
,heroism and design lofty of full so eye an with ,speech his in
that can you wonder that these men were moved? They looked at one
retire to them told I ;spoke I .reply to unable were and another
and consider of what had been said, that I would not lead them
that but ,contrary the desired strenuously they if north farther
I hoped that, with reflection, their courage would return.
sunk was he but ,friend my towards turned I and retired They
in languor and almost deprived of life.

How all this will terminate, I know not, but I had rather die than
be will such fear I Yet .unfulfilled purpose my ,shamefully return
my fate; the men, unsupported by ideas of glory and honour, can
.hardships present their endure to continue willingly never

September 7th

The die is cast; I have consented to return if we are not
;indecision and cowardice by blasted hopes my are Thus .destroyed

Frankenstein

I come back ignorant and disappointed. It requires more philosophy
.patience with injustice this bear to possess I than

September 12th

It is past; I am returning to England. I have lost my hopes of
to endeavour will I But .friend my lost have I ;glory and utility
detail these bitter circumstances to you, my dear sister; and while
.despond not will I ,you towards and England towards wafted am I

September 9th,

The ice began to move, and roarings like thunder were heard at
.direction every in cracked and split islands the as distance a
We were in the most imminent peril, but as we could only remain
guest unfortunate my by occupied was attention chief my ,passive
whose illness increased in such a degree that he was entirely
with driven was and us behind cracked ice The .bed his to confined
force towards the north; a breeze sprang from the west, and on the
the When .free perfectly became south the towards passage the 11th
sailors saw this and that their return to their native country was
,them from broke joy tumultuous of shout a ,assured apparently
loud and long-continued. Frankenstein, who was dozing, awoke and
they because" ,said I " ,shout They" .tumult the of cause the asked
will soon return to England."

"Do you, then, really return?"

"Alas! Yes; I cannot withstand their demands. I cannot lead them
".return must I and ,danger to unwillingly

"Do so, if you will; but I will not. You may give up your purpose,
,weak am I .not dare I and ,heaven by me to assigned is mine but

Frankenstein

but surely the spirits who assist my vengeance will endow me with
,bed the from spring to endeavoured he ,this Saying ".strength sufficient
but the exertion was too great for him; he fell back and fainted.

It was long before he was restored, and I often thought that life
breathed he ;eyes his opened he length At .extinct entirely was
with difficulty and was unable to speak. The surgeon gave him a
the In .undisturbed him leave to us ordered and draught composing
meantime he told me that my friend had certainly not many hours to live.

His sentence was pronounced, and I could only grieve and be patient.
thought I and ,closed were eyes his ;him watching ,bed his by sat I
he slept; but presently he called to me in a feeble voice, and bidding
that feel I ;gone is on relied I strength The !Alas" ,said ,near come me
I shall soon die, and he, my enemy and persecutor, may still be in being.
that feel I existence my of moments last the in that ,Walton ,not Think
burning hatred and ardent desire of revenge I once expressed; but I feel
last these During .adversary my of death the desiring in justified myself
days I have been occupied in examining my past conduct; nor do I find
rational a created I madness enthusiastic of fit a In .blamable it
creature and was bound towards him to assure, as far as was in my power,
-well and happiness his

This was my duty, but there was another still paramount to that.
claims greater had species own my of beings the towards duties My
to my attention because they included a greater proportion of
did I and ,refused I ,view this by Urged .misery or happiness
right in refusing, to create a companion for the first creature.
;evil in selfishness and malignity unparalleled showed He
he destroyed my friends; he devoted to destruction beings who
I do nor ;wisdom and ,happiness ,sensations exquisite possessed
know where this thirst for vengeance may end. Miserable himself
.die to ought he ,wretched other no render may he that
The task of his destruction was mine, but I have failed.
you asked I ,motives vicious and selfish by actuated When
to undertake my unfinished work, and I renew this request now,
.virtue and reason by induced only am I when

Frankenstein

"Yet I cannot ask you to renounce your country and friends to fulfil
have will you ,England to returning are you that now and ;task this
little chance of meeting with him. But the consideration of these points,
;you to leave I ,duties your esteem may you what of balancing well the and
my judgment and ideas are already disturbed by the near approach of death.
mised be still may I for ,right think I what do to you ask not dare I
by passion.

"That he should live to be an instrument of mischief disturbs me;
,release my expect momentarily I when ,hour this ,respects other in
is the only happy one which I have enjoyed for several years.
.arms their to hasten I and ,me before flit dead beloved the of forms The
Farewell, Walton! Seek happiness in tranquillity and avoid ambition,
distinguishing of one innocent apparently the only be it if even
yourself in science and discoveries. Yet why do I say this?
".succeed may another yet ,hopes these in blasted been myself have I

His voice became fainter as he spoke, and at length, exhausted by
he afterwards hour an half About .silence into sank he ,effort his
attempted again to speak but was unable; he pressed my hand feebly,
gentle a of irradiation the while ,forever closed eyes his and
smile passed away from his lips.

Margaret, what comment can I make on the untimely extinction of
to you enable will that say I can What ?spirit glorious this
understand the depth of my sorrow? All that I should express would
overshadowed is mind my ;flow tears My .feeble and inadequate be
by a cloud of disappointment. But I journey towards England,
.consolation find there may I and

I am interrupted. What do these sounds portend? It is midnight;
.stir scarcely deck on watch the and ,fairly blows breeze the
Again there is a sound as of a human voice, but hoarser; it comes
.lie still Frankenstein of remains the where cabin the from
I must arise and examine. Good night, my sister.

Great God! what a scene has just taken place! I am yet dizzy
have shall I whether know hardly I .it of remembrance the with
the power to detail it; yet the tale which I have recorded would be

Frankenstein

entered I .catastrophe wonderful and final this without incomplete
the cabin where lay the remains of my ill-fated and admirable friend.
--describe to words find cannot I which form a hung him Over
in stature, yet uncouth and distorted in its proportions.
locks long by concealed was face his ,coffin the over hung he As
of ragged hair; but one vast hand was extended, in colour and apparent
,approach my of sound the heard he When .mummy a of that like texture
he ceased to utter exclamations of grief and horror and sprung towards
,face his as horrible so vision a behold I did Never .window the
of such loathsome yet appalling hideousness. I shut my eyes
duties my were what recollect to endeavoured and involuntarily
with regard to this destroyer. I called on him to stay.

He paused, looking on me with wonder, and again turning towards
,presence my forget to seemed he ,creator his of form lifeless the
and every feature and gesture seemed instigated by the wildest rage
.passion uncontrollable some of

"That is also my victim!" he exclaimed. "In his murder my crimes are
!close its to wound is being my of series miserable the ;consummated
Oh, Frankenstein! Generous and self-devoted being! What does it avail
thee destroyed irretrievably who ,I ?me pardon to thee ask now I that
by destroying all thou lovedst. Alas! He is cold, he cannot answer me."
had which ,impulses first my and ,suffocated seemed voice His
suggested to me the duty of obeying the dying request of my friend
of mixture a by suspended now were ,enemy his destroying in
curiosity and compassion. I approached this tremendous being;
something was there ,face his to eyes my raise again not dared I
so scaring and unearthly in his ugliness. I attempted to speak,
utter to continued monster The .lips my on away died words the but
wild and incoherent self-reproaches. At length I gathered resolution
.passion his of tempest the of pause a in him address to

"Your repentance," I said, "is now superfluous. If you had listened
before remorse of stings the heeded and conscience of voice the to
you had urged your diabolical vengeance to this extremity, Frankenstein
".lived have yet would

Frankenstein

"And do you dream?" said the daemon. "Do you think that I was then
,corpse the to pointing ,continued he ",He ?remorse and agony to dead
"he suffered not in the consummation of the deed. Oh! Not the
the during mine was that anguish the of portion -ten
lingering detail of its execution. A frightful selfishness
.remorse with poisoned was heart my while ,on me hurried
Think you that the groans of Clerval were music to my ears?
,sympathy and love of susceptible be to fashioned was heart My
and when wrenched by misery to vice and hatred, it did not endure
.imagine even cannot you as such torture without change the of violence the

"After the murder of Clerval I returned to Switzerland,
pity my ;Frankenstein pitied I .overcome and -heart
amounted to horror; I abhorred myself. But when I discovered that he,
,torments unspeakable its of and existence my of once at author the
dared to hope for happiness, that while he accumulated wretchedness
passions and feelings in enjoyment own his sought he me upon despair and
from the indulgence of which I was forever barred, then impotent envy
.vengeance for thirst insatiable an with me filled indignation bitter and
I recollected my threat and resolved that it should be accomplished.
,slave the was I but ,torture deadly a myself for preparing was I that knew I
not the master, of an impulse which I detested yet could not disobey.
,feeling all off cast had I .miserable not was I then ,Nay !died she when Yet
subdued all anguish, to riot in the excess of my despair. Evil thenceforth
an to nature my adapt to but choice no had I ,far thus Urged .good my became
element which I had willingly chosen. The completion of my demoniacal design
"!victim last my is there ;ended is it now And .passion insatiable an became

I was at first touched by the expressions of his misery; yet,
of powers his of said had Frankenstein what mind to called I when
eloquence and persuasion, and when I again cast my eyes on the
.me within rekindled was indignation ,friend my of form lifeless
"Wretch!" I said. "It is well that you come here to whine over the
of pile a into torch a throw You .made have you that desolation
buildings, and when they are consumed, you sit among the ruins and
,lived still mourn you whom he If !fiend Hypocritical .fall the lament
still would he be the object, again would he become the prey,
;feel you that pity not is It .vengeance accursed your of
you lament only because the victim of your malignity is withdrawn

".power your from

"Oh, it is not thus--not thus," interrupted the being. "Yet such the be to appears what by you to conveyed impression the be must purport of my actions. Yet I seek not a fellow feeling in my misery. love the was it ,it sought first I When .find ever I may sympathy No of virtue, the feelings of happiness and affection with which my whole virtue that now But .participated be to wished I that ,overflowed being has become to me a shadow, and that happiness and affection are turned ?sympathy for seek I should what in ,despair loathing and bitter into I am content to suffer alone while my sufferings shall endure; opprobrium and abhorrence that satisfied well am I ,die I when should load my memory. Once my fancy was soothed with dreams of virtue, with meet to hoped falsely I Once .enjoyment of and ,fame of beings who, pardoning my outward form, would love me for the was I .unfolding of capable was I which qualities excellent nourished with high thoughts of honour and devotion. But now crime ,mischief no ,guilt No .animal meanest the beneath me degraded has no malignity, no misery, can be found comparable to mine. When I that believe cannot I ,sins my of catalogue frightful the over run I am the same creature whose thoughts were once filled with sublime .goodness of majesty the and beauty the of visions transcendent and But it is even so; the fallen angel becomes a malignant devil. in associates and friends had man and God of enemy that even Yet his desolation; I am alone. "You, who call Frankenstein your friend, in But .misfortunes his and crimes my of knowledge a have to seem the detail which he gave you of them he could not sum up the hours .passions impotent in wasting endured I which misery of months and For while I destroyed his hopes, I did not satisfy my own desires. and love desired I still ;craving and ardent forever were They fellowship, and I was still spurned. Was there no injustice in this? ?me against sinned humankind all when ,criminal only the thought be to I Am Why do you not hate Felix, who drove his friend from his door with contumely? saviour the destroy to sought who rustic the execrate not you do Why of his child? Nay, these are virtuous and immaculate beings! ,at spurned be to ,abortion an am ,abandoned the and miserable the ,I and kicked, and trampled on. Even now my blood boils at the recollection .injustice this of

Frankenstein

"But it is true that I am a wretch. I have murdered the lovely and slept they as innocent the strangled have I ;helpless the and grasped to death his throat who never injured me or any other of specimen select the ,creator my devoted have I .thing living all that is worthy of love and admiration among men, to misery; .ruin irremediable that to even him pursued have I

There he lies, white and cold in death. You hate me, but your .myself regard I which with that equal cannot abhorrence I look on the hands which executed the deed; I think on the heart the for long and conceived was it of imagination the which in moment when these hands will meet my eyes, when that imagination .more no thoughts my haunt will

"Fear not that I shall be the instrument of future mischief. death 'man any nor yours Neither .complete nearly is work My is needed to consummate the series of my being and accomplish that think not Do .own my requires it but ,done be must which that I shall be slow to perform this sacrifice. I shall quit your vessel most the seek shall and thither me brought which raft ice the on northern extremity of the globe; I shall collect my funeral pile may remains its that ,frame miserable this ashes to consume and afford no light to any curious and unhallowed wretch who would longer no shall I .die shall I .been have I as another such create feel the agonies which now consume me or be the prey of feelings ;being into me called who dead is He .unquenched yet ,unsatisfied and when I shall be no more, the very remembrance of us both will feel or stars or sun the see longer no shall I .vanish speedily the winds play on my cheeks.

Light, feeling, and sense will pass away; and in this condition which images the when ,ago years Some .happiness my find I must this world affords first opened upon me, when I felt the cheering the and leaves the of rustling the heard and summer of warmth warbling of the birds, and these were all to me, I should have wept torn and crimes by Polluted .consolation only my is it now ;die to by the bitterest remorse, where can I find rest but in death? whom humankind of last the you in and ,you leave I !Farewell" these eyes will ever behold. Farewell, Frankenstein! If thou wert

Frankenstein

,me against revenge of desire a cherished yet and alive yet
it would be better satiated in my life than in my destruction.
not might I that ,extinction my seek didst thou ;so not was it But
cause greater wretchedness; and if yet, in some mode unknown to me,
not wouldst thou ,feel and think to ceased not hadst thou
desire against me a vengeance greater than that which I feel.
,thine to superior still was agony my ,wert thou as Blasted
for the bitter sting of remorse will not cease to rankle
.forever them close shall death until wounds my in

"But soon," he cried with sad and solemn enthusiasm, "I shall die,
miseries burning these Soon .felt longer no be feel now I what and
will be extinct. I shall ascend my funeral pile triumphantly and
that of light The .flames torturing the of agony the in exult
conflagration will fade away; my ashes will be swept into the sea
,thinks it if or ,peace in sleep will spirit My .winds the by
it will not surely think thus. Farewell."

He sprang from the cabin window as he said this, upon the ice raft
waves the by away borne soon was He .vessel the to close lay which
and lost in darkness and distance.

We make these texts available for fun and relaxation, but also run a research project about the script.

If you enjoyed reading Empowerment Script, or found it a challenge, let us know.

If you notice an increase in ideas or mental space, let us know.

We make no recommendations about therapy, but if you would like to contact a therapist, we suggest you also seek out an EMDR practitioner or a CBT therapist who will put their reading material into Empowerment Script. If you have a therapist, let them know you have been reading Empowerment Script, and ask if they will add an EMDR or CBT therapist to your therapy team.



> enjoy > connect
empowermentscript.com
achieve < create <